

THE AGGREY-FRASER-GUGGISBERG  
MEMORIAL LECTURES 1968

# SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

W. Arthur Lewis

*Professor of Economics and International Affairs,  
Woodrow Wilson School of Public and International Affairs,  
Princeton University*

LONDON  
GEORGE ALLEN & UNWIN LTD

Copyright (c) 1969 W. Arthur Lewis

First published 1969 for the University of Ghana  
by the Ghana Publishing Corporation  
(Publishing Division)  
P.O. Box 4348, Accra, Ghana

23/69

Printed in Ghana by the  
Ghana Publishing Corporation  
(Printing Division)  
Accra-Tema

## *Contents*

Foreword	vii
Preface	ix
Two Decades of Growth	1
The Economics of Education	17
Development Planning	35
Socialism in Africa	53
The Process of Transformation	71

## Foreword

THE Aggrey-Fraser-Guggisberg Memorial Lectures were first instituted in 1957 by the University of Ghana with funds provided by the Government of Ghana, in order to commemorate the work of the three founders of Achimota College: Kwegyir Aggrey, Alec Fraser and Gordon Guggisberg, the three people who did so much in laying the foundations of a sound educational system for the Gold Coast, as it was then, and in particular for higher education.

Of these three people, Kwegyir Aggrey, a native of Anomabu in Ghana was a great African visionary and spokesman for racial harmony and equality. His outstanding contributions are symbolised in the shield of Achimota College, the black and white piano keys which stand for the harmony of the black and white races. Alec Fraser, the first Principal of Achimota, was a humane, courageous and far-sighted Scottish educationist who, in the days of scepticism about the educational potential of the African, translated his faith in a modern African education into brilliant reality. Gordon Guggisberg is perhaps the best administrator that Britain ever sent to govern a West African colony, who, against many odds and at great personal sacrifice and far in advance of the official colonial thinking of his day, gave concrete expression to the ideals which now form the basis of Ghana's present progress. Under his vigorous sponsorship Achimota College grew to be one of the most distinguished and formative educational institutions in Africa out of which our present University of Ghana is ultimately derived. These are the people whose vision and dedicated service to the cause of African education are commemorated by these lectures.

It has been a great and distinguished series, five of which have been delivered so far. In 1957 Lady Jackson (Barbara Ward) delivered the first lectures on "A Background to World Affairs" out of which grew her famous book—"Five Ideas That Changed The World." In 1960 Sir Jajachamaraja Wadiyar Bahadur gave the lectures on "Traditions, Ideals and Values in the Atomic Age." He was followed in 1961 by Sir Julian Huxley who spoke on "Evolutionary Destiny and Africa." In 1963 Dr. Davidson Nicol, Principal of Fourah Bay College, Sierra Leone, chose as his theme "Africa, a Subjective View"; and in 1965 Professor Dorothy Crawford Hodgkin spoke on "Crystallography and Medicine". The sixth group of lectures in the series were delivered in March 1968 by Professor Sir William Arthur Lewis on the theme: "A Review of Development," and these lectures form the subject of this book.

Professor Sir Arthur Lewis is, incontrovertibly, one of the most distinguished economists alive today. He has been Professor of Economics and International Affairs at the Woodrow Wilson School in Princeton University since 1963 and became Chancellor of the University of Guyana

two years ago. He was born in the West Indian island of St. Lucia in 1915 and was educated in St. Mary's College, St. Lucia, and at the London School of Economics where, after a brilliant academic career, he was appointed first Lecturer in Economics and later Reader in Colonial Economics at the University of London in 1947; subsequently he was elected to the Stanley Jevons Professorship of Political Economy at the University of Manchester in 1948, a chair which he held with great distinction for ten years from 1948 to 1958. After a spell as Principal and Vice-Chancellor of the University of West Indies, he was appointed to his present position in Princeton. During this period, he has on many occasions served as an Economic Adviser and consultant to the United Nations and various Foundations in many countries, including Ghana.

Sir Arthur Lewis is best known for his general works on Economic Planning which are today among the classics of Development Economics, and of which one may mention "The Principles of Economic Planning" (1949), "The Theory of Economic Growth" (1955) and, most recently, "Development Planning" (1966). But we in Ghana and West Africa in general are also grateful to him for his sage observations on the West African political scene contained in his perceptive little book—"Politics in West Africa"—which he first gave as the Whidden Lectures in Toronto University in 1965.

As Sir Arthur says in the preface to this book, he provides in these lectures a popular and more generalized exposition of problems which he has dealt with elsewhere in greater technical detail and are well-known to the experts. The enthusiasm with which his lectures were received and the large numbers of Ghanaians who crowded into the Great Hall of the University of Ghana to hear him underline the urgency and topicality of the theme that he has chosen to discuss. The issues that he has treated are very much alive not only in Ghana, but in most of the developing countries in Africa and elsewhere. He points out in a simple, lucid and convincing manner the economic pitfalls into which the governments of developing countries find themselves and suggests ways out of them. It is our hope that these lectures will be read and that the many lessons the author draws will be pondered and acted upon by economists, politicians, members of parliament, scholars, and all who have a part in helping to shape the policies of governments in the developing countries in the world in general and Africa in particular. They will all find this book exceedingly enlightening and useful, and I would like here to express the thanks of the University of Ghana to Professor Sir Arthur Lewis for the service he has rendered to all of us.

The publication of this book has been made possible by a generous offer from the Pioneer Tobacco Company Limited of Ghana and the University of Ghana acknowledges this offer with gratitude.

A. A. KWAPONG  
*Vice-Chancellor*  
*University of Ghana*  
*Legon*

## *Preface*

SINCE the second world war it has become quite clear that rapid economic growth is available to those countries with adequate natural resources which make the effort to achieve it. Annual growth rates of 10 per cent for manufacturing, 3 per cent for domestic food, and 5 per cent for other commercial agriculture have been achieved by very many under developed countries, and can now be taken by most as tests of adequate performance.

It has also become clear that success depends on partnership between government and people. It is the people who invest in learning, in trying out new crops or techniques, and in the physical plant or effort which increase industrial and agricultural production. They do this wherever incentives are present, and fail to do it where governments bind economic activities in chains. The government for its part must levy taxes and raise funds abroad, to provide infrastructure, to help finance investment in agriculture and housing, and to do some pioneering in manufacturing. It gives a lead to private activity, but must find the right balance between leading and restraining.

There are other philosophies of economic development, but in the underdeveloped world the countries which have embraced them have all fallen into relative economic stagnation. The reason is not far to seek. Most of these other philosophies presuppose the existence of a government which is honest and efficient, and which can mobilise large resources of educated and managerial talent, and of money. Most governments of underdeveloped countries are not in this situation, so when they over-expand their ambitions they destroy more than they create. There is no single answer to the question "what is the appropriate economic role of the government?" No answer can be given until we know whether the government in question is reasonably honest and capable, or whether it spoils everything that it touches.

These issues are very much discussed in Ghana at the present time, as people try to assess the achievements and failures of the past two decades. Accordingly when asked to give the Aggrey-Fraser-Guggisberg Memorial Lectures, to a public audience which would number over a thousand, I chose for my topic a review of some of the principal factors which have determined the course of economic development since the war, not specifically in Ghana, but more generally in the underdeveloped world. I hoped that the wider setting might help in creating perspective.

The nature and size of the audience precluded technicality, and imposed the method of generalisation at a reasonably elementary level

The lectures were not intended for publication, and are now issued by the University of Ghana only in response to public demand.

Lecturing in this atmosphere is an awesome experience, because one is overwhelmed by one's sense of responsibility, by the questioning one receives after the lectures, and by the stream of hospitality. But it has immense rewards. My audience was receptive and kind. The people of Ghana are renowned for their liveliness and vigour. I came away, as ever stimulated by my contacts, and sharing the pervasive confidence in an unlimited future.

May 1968

W.A.L.

x

## *1. Two Decades of Growth*



The world has been unusually prosperous since the second world war. World production and world trade have both grown faster than ever before. For example, world industrial production grew at a rate of just under 4 per cent per annum in the last quarter of the nineteenth century. The first half of the twentieth century fared badly, because of two world wars and a great depression. The growth rate was naturally high immediately after the second world war, but even if we take only recent years, say, 1955 to 1965, the rate of growth of world industrial production (excluding the Communist countries) has been 5.2 per cent per annum. (The post-war percentages used here are calculated from the United Nations *Statistical Year Book*.)

The growth of world trade has also accelerated. This also grew by between three and four per cent up to 1929. Then it slumped during the great depression of the 1930's and the war, rose again very rapidly after the war, and in the years since 1955 has averaged 6.4 per cent per annum. This is a remarkable figure when you remember that anything which grows by six per cent doubles in twelve years.

Not surprisingly the rich countries have fared better than the poor since they have more skills and capital. But their advantage has narrowed considerably. If we take all kinds of output, industrial, agricultural and services, the overall rate of growth is about the same in rich and poor countries, namely about  $4\frac{1}{2}$  per cent per year. Industry grows much faster in the poor countries than in the rich, but agriculture is still relatively stagnant in the poor countries, with their millions of subsistence farmers, and it is the slow growth rate of agriculture that keeps their average rate of growth down to the same level as that of the rich countries.

The difference between the two groups of countries is not in the growth of total output, but in the growth of output per head. Population grows faster in the poorer countries, so the growth rate per head is lower. It is about two per cent per year.

A growth rate of two per cent per head per year is respectable by historical standards. Neither the British nor the American economy has ever grown faster than two per cent per head, and the much publicised leap forward of Japan between 1868 and 1913 now seems to have been only two per cent per head per year. A growth rate of two per cent gives you a standard of living seven times as high in a hundred years, which is what the industrial countries have achieved.

So though we need to do better, we must first appreciate that what the

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

poorer countries have been doing since the second world war is remarkable, and is without precedent in their history. Those who go around belittling the progress of the last two decades, even to the point of asserting that the poor countries are getting poorer, are dishonouring the magnificent effort which has been made by the farmers, workers, businessmen and governments of these countries. They lend credit to the erroneous idea that efforts to help these countries are fruitless, because they merely bog down in a morass of corruption or inertia. They therefore do a disservice to the poor countries as well as dishonouring their achievement. One cannot get the underdeveloped countries into perspective unless one begins by recognising that their rate of economic growth since the war compares very favourably with what the industrial countries have achieved over the past hundred years.

Several factors have sustained this relative prosperity, and I wish to speak about them under three heads:

Firstly, improved infrastructure;

Secondly, the expansion of world trade; and

Thirdly, rapid industrialisation.

Each of these requires extended treatment.

### Infrastructure

Let me take first infrastructure. This refers to such public services as education, transport, water supplies, electric power and public health. If we were speaking in Europe or North America it would seem strange to begin with infrastructure, since in industrial countries the rate of economic growth would not be much affected by spending a lot of money on infrastructure. Africa and Asia are different. Their public services were so poorly developed at the end of the second world war that they were a bottleneck. This was especially true of transportation, electricity, water and secondary education.

The improvement of infrastructure is one of the spectacular features of the period since the end of the war all over the underdeveloped world. To some extent it results from the development of the economy, in the sense that it is the growth of agriculture and industrial output which has provided the money to pay for public services. But there has also been a change of emphasis, in favour of providing more public service instead of

private affluence. Governments have more money partly because the people are richer, and partly because the governments take proportionately more in taxes now than they did before the war. It used to be thought that the best way to develop a country was to keep taxes as low as possible; now we have learnt that on the contrary development requires high taxes to provide adequate public services.

Of course I need hardly tell *you* that increased public expenditure is not always creditable. All underdeveloped countries can show plenty of examples of wasted public expenditure. I shall also in later lectures be stressing the importance of having a budget surplus, with which to finance capital formation, and which can be realised only by restraining government expenditure on current account. But when all this is said, it is indisputable that the improvement of the public services has enabled the underdeveloped countries to grow more rapidly than they could otherwise have done.

Now while the major element is the increase in government revenues through taxation, a significant role has also been played by foreign aid. The growth of foreign aid in the 1950's was beyond all expectations. In 1950 the figure was about two billion dollars; ten years later it had tripled, to six billion dollars; and by 1965 it was ten billion dollars (including Communist contributions and three billions of private investment). That made it about four per cent of the income of underdeveloped countries. If one adopts the conventional ratio that three of capital is associated with one of income, one may surmise that foreign aid was responsible for half the growth rate of real income per head in recent years.

However such aggregation is meaningless, since foreign aid was not evenly distributed. France, which gives more aid than any other country, relatively to its own resources, has concentrated most of its aid on former colonies in West Africa and North Africa. Next to the French Africans the biggest recipients of aid have been India, Pakistan, and the countries on the borders of the Communist world who have been supported by the United States—Greece, Turkey, Afghanistan, Thailand and so on all the way around to South Korea. Latin America has also done very well. Almost alone British Africa has received very little aid, partly because, unlike the French Africans, the British African governments in the early sixties placed higher priority on asserting their neutrality between the Eastern and Western powers, and therefore landed themselves in political isolation.

I refer here only to genuine long-term aid, and not to short-term

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

commercial credits, designed to sell machinery, which are available from any industrial country to anybody at any time. Over-indulgence in short-term credits is the straight road to bankruptcy, as half a dozen naive or reckless countries, including Ghana, have discovered to their cost over the past dozen years. What underdeveloped countries need is long-term credits on easy terms, and this is where British Africa has fallen far behind Asia and Latin America.

Foreign aid ceased to grow in the middle sixties, and it has now begun to go down. America is afflicted with a weariness of spirit, springing from the surprise of finding herself with apparently so few friends, after having been so active in foreign affairs over the past twenty years. American sentiment was isolationist for two hundred years, so the powerful current now pushing America back towards isolationism seems for many nothing more than a return to the traditions of one's forefathers. In the British case withdrawal from the rest of the world is a more revolutionary event, but the British are even more united in believing this to be right than are the Americans.

The result, in either case, is to impress on the underdeveloped world that it must lift itself up by its own bootstraps, as the now industrial countries did for themselves in the nineteenth century. This is a hard lesson to learn. Whenever the underdeveloped countries come together they pass innumerable resolutions demanding more aid from the rich. They may get it, but they would not be wise to count on it.

### World Trade

Let me turn from infrastructure to agricultural and industrial production. Most of the extra money raised by governments in Asia or Africa has come from taxing exports, in one way or another. A swift expansion of world trade has been the background of the swift expansion of production over the past two decades, so let us start at this point.

World trade, like world production, has grown faster than ever before; is now growing at the high rate of 6.4 per cent per annum. But whereas in production developed and underdeveloped countries are growing at roughly the same rates, in trade there is a substantial difference. The trade of the rich is growing much faster than that of the poor.

To understand what is happening in world trade we must first make the

usual distinction between trade in manufactures and trade in primary products, which are food and raw materials. The amount of primary products which the industrial countries import is a function of their prosperity, so there has been a fairly constant relationship between world industrial production and world trade in primary products, with the former growing slightly faster than the latter. This relationship has held since the last quarter of the nineteenth century, and is still holding now, except that the gap has somewhat narrowed. So, since industrial production is growing faster than ever before, world trade in primary products is also growing faster than ever before (by about 4.5 per cent per year).

Growing still faster, however, is world trade in manufactures (8 per cent), and this is anomalous, since the share of manufactures in world trade used to be constant. However, the reason for this change is quite obvious, namely, the lowering of tariff barriers. During the great depression of the 1930's every country raised its tariffs and adopted foreign exchange controls to keep out other countries' manufactures. Since the war obstacles to trade have been demolished to an extent comparable only with the short period 1850-1880 during which the major countries came near to being converted to absolute freedom of trade. New customs unions have been created in Western Europe involving complete elimination of tariffs over wide areas, and successive negotiations through the international agency known as GATT have brought industrial tariffs down on a world-wide basis. So the industrial countries are buying more and more from each other. They specialise increasingly, so for the time being their trade in manufactures is growing much faster than their production.

This has its corollaries. Spokesmen of the less developed countries complain bitterly that they are being left behind, and cite as a favourite piece of evidence the fact that the share of the less developed countries in world trade is falling. For example, they had 27 per cent of world trade in 1953, whereas in 1965 their share had fallen from 27 to 20 per cent. Naturally, since world trade in manufactures is increasing very rapidly, the proportionate share of those countries which export mainly primary products is falling. This is not harmful to the underdeveloped countries since the increased trade in manufactures is not being done at their expense. Figures about relative proportions are simply irrelevant.

What matters is the actual rate of growth of the trade of the less developed countries. Here we get two answers. In terms of the quantities moved, the growth rate since 1955 has been 4.8 per cent per annum.

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

But since prices have been falling, the growth rate in terms of dollars earned by exports has been somewhat less, namely, 3.9 per cent per annum.

Speaking historically, these are high rates, but this appeal to history is also irrelevant. The underdeveloped countries now want to grow faster than ever before, and therefore need more trade than ever before.

The trouble with the present rate of growth is not its overall level, which is pretty high by any standard, but its distribution between countries. For while some commodities are doing very well, others are doing rather badly. The overall growth rate is high because the oil exporting countries are doing well, and some of the countries exporting such minerals as copper, bauxite and iron ore. These are a minority of countries. The majority export agricultural products, and agricultural products from the underdeveloped countries are having a bad time.

Taken as a whole, world trade in agricultural products is not doing too badly. There is a booming demand for cereals, for meat, and for some kinds of fruit and vegetables, but these are not what the underdeveloped countries mainly export. They export coffee, tea, cocoa, sugar, cotton and rubber, all of which are a drag on the market. The only agricultural export from underdeveloped countries which is doing well is vegetable oils. So if one takes out the minerals, and measures only the value of the agricultural exports of underdeveloped countries, the rate of growth comes down to two and a quarter per cent per year, which is certainly embarrassingly low for countries which need overall growth rates of about 5 per cent per annum.

This situation can be explained both on the demand and the supply sides.

On the demand side, the world just has all the tea, coffee, cocoa and sugar it wants for the time being; more precisely, the demand for these products is growing slowly. The industrial countries have also developed synthetic substitutes for rubber and for cotton, which have eaten into the markets for these two. So the countries which specialise in producing tea, cocoa, coffee, cotton and rubber are trying to increase their sales faster than world demand increases.

One would think that the answer must be to curtail supplies and to switch to the commodities which the world does want, but just at this time a new supplier, Africa, is forging ahead in the world market for just these agricultural commodities. If we take underdeveloped countries only, Africa's share of exports (excluding North Africa and South Africa) has risen from 8 per cent in 1938 to 10 per cent in 1948 and 14 per cent in

1965. Sub-Saharan Africa is doing better in world trade than the rest of the underdeveloped world.

Africa is a newcomer in world trade. At the time of the first world war, only fifty years ago, exports from Africa were still negligible when exports from Asia and Latin America were already large. African exports now grow more rapidly because the African farmer has a comparative advantage in the export crops we are talking about. His alternative is to grow food. But he is not as productive in growing food as the Asian or Latin American farmer, because the tsetse fly prevents him from using draft animals. With draft animals the Asians and Latin Americans can cultivate larger acreages, and so produce more food per farmer, but they are no more efficient with tree crops like cocoa or coffee than the African farmer. Hence when you compare the price of food with the price of tree crops, they need a higher price for tree crops than the African farmer does, to compensate for their potentially larger output of food. In other words, a price which is unattractive to the Latin American farmer is still high enough for the African farmer to go on planting more. And since Africa is only now being opened up with roads and lorries, we can expect a very rapid spread of commercial agriculture to continue for some time even at what the rest of the world thinks of as very low prices. The rate of expansion in recent years of Africa's output of cocoa, coffee, tea, bananas, peanuts, cotton and rubber has been fantastically high. All African countries which have good rainfall have been growing rapidly since the second world war, with the exception of Guinea.

This swift growth of African output of these few commodities, in the face of a world demand which is not growing rapidly, has helped to bring prices down. The immediate reaction, of course, is a cry from the underdeveloped countries to fix a floor under prices. The demand for international commodity agreements to fix minimum prices has dominated international economic conferences for the last ten years. The chief snag is that if you hold up the price, the supplies will grow all the faster, and sooner or later pressure of unsold stocks will bring prices down with a bump. Therefore if such schemes are to succeed, producers must not be allowed to increase supplies; each country is given a restricted quota. A quota is hard on Africa, which is just beginning to get a foot in the world market. Any international commodity scheme is equivalent to Asia and Latin America saying to Africa: "Look, this is our market; keep out of it; we were here first." In the case of cocoa, Africa has already driven

nearly everybody else out, so the argument is mainly between one African country and another. But in coffee, tea, rubber or anything else a commodity scheme affects Africa's prospects of expansion more than anybody else's.

One would think it more important for Asia and Latin America to concentrate on shifting out of these products which the world doesn't want into other agricultural products which are booming, especially cereals and meat. The current situation is indeed anomalous. Thirty years ago the underdeveloped countries had a large surplus of food; they were net exporters of cereals and meat. Now they are net importers. On the one hand, their populations are growing rapidly, and on the other hand their production of food grows slowly. So while using their lands to grow tea and coffee which they cannot sell, the underdeveloped countries are importing more and more food. If the United States had not had large food surpluses over the last ten years, which it was prepared more or less to give away, several countries would have been in serious trouble.

These surpluses have come to an end, and food prices are rising, so here is a real challenge to the agriculture of developing countries. Why have they not met it before? There are several answers. One is that the existence of the American surpluses kept down food prices for a time, and restricted potential markets. Another answer is that most of the governments have had their minds on other things — especially on industrialisation — and most governments, like most human beings, can really only do one thing properly at a time. Another reason is sheer ignorance. Most people are not aware how great the agricultural opportunities are; that simply with new seeds and fertilisers one can more than double the yields of maize or millet; or that with proper care the death rate in young cattle can be reduced by eighty per cent, just as the death rate among human infants has been reduced by eighty per cent. People overestimate the resources needed to help the small farmers to get much better yields. They tend to believe that the job can be done only by organising huge farms with a lot of machinery, and since neither the capital nor the manpower is available for any significant extension of large-scale production, the food problem gets worse every year.

If underdeveloped countries cannot sell their coffee and have to import food, they will have to pay for their food by exporting manufactures. This brings me to the third cause of rapid growth over the last two decades, namely, the rapid industrialisation which has occurred.



### Industrialisation

Industrialisation has proved to be relatively easy in its early stages. Growth rates are high. While five per cent is considered high in developed countries most underdeveloped countries are achieving more than seven per cent, and rates of up to ten per cent are common.

These high rates were possible temporarily because the underdeveloped countries were importing such a large part of their requirements. So, as I did for Ghana in 1952, anybody could take the import list and pick out the commodities which could be made at home. Very high on that list were cotton textiles and other forms of clothing, and this is the area where manufacturing has been making the greatest progress in these countries.

High rates of growth have also been possible because of the availability of foreign capital, bringing with it both the machinery and the industrial know-how which the underdeveloped countries did not themselves have. Industry has grown most swiftly in the countries most open to foreign capital — faster in Nigeria or the Ivory Coast than in Ghana, where the atmosphere has not been encouraging to private industrialists, and there were not enough state factories to fill the gap. From now on private foreign investment is going to be harder to get. Both the British and the American governments have now put sharp restrictions on the export of their capital. They want their capital to stay at home and do for British and American employment and income what it would otherwise be doing for employment and income in foreign countries. At the moment underdeveloped countries are exempted from these restrictions on foreign investment, but as the balance of payments difficulties continue in Britain and America, and isolationism intensifies, all capital export will be subject to control. The rapid growth of industrialisation over the last fifteen years, based primarily on foreign investment, may not continue for long.

Actually these high growth rates of industry, eight, ten, even fifteen per cent per annum, are more spectacular as statistics than in their contribution to national income. Many countries have already observed that though industrialisation absorbs enormous capital, it provides little employment. When modern highly capitalised industry is introduced into an underdeveloped country, most of the additional wealth is created by the machine, and stays with the machine rather than with the wage-earners. What this means is highlighted by the Census of Manufactures taken in Nigeria in 1963. The Census shows the value added by factories, which is the diff-

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

erence between what they pay for raw materials and what they get for the final product. This value added is the sum available to pay wages, salaries, taxes, depreciation on capital, and profits. The Nigerian figures show that only twenty-two per cent of value added was paid out to Nigerians as wages. Another nine per cent was paid out to expatriates as salaries. The remaining sixty-nine per cent went for depreciation, taxes and profits, and since the taxes were mostly exempted under pioneer inducement legislation, the proportion of value added accruing to Nigerians cannot have been more than about a quarter. Industrialisation contributes mightily to the statistics of growth, but its contribution to the people's income is relatively small.

These Nigerian figures are not abnormal. One would get much the same picture for Ghana, even in the government-owned factories. The share of capital in value added is always high—ranging from 50 per cent in developed to 70 per cent in the least developed countries, the higher rates being due to the higher cost of buying and maintaining machines, their shorter life, and the greater risks of the investment. These factors remain the same whether private people make the investment, or whether the government makes the investment. The proportion of the share of capital going abroad is high because all the depreciation goes abroad, to purchase new machines, and interest and amortisation go abroad to those who put up the money. Again government ownership makes no difference if the government has to borrow the money from abroad; it has to remit abroad to purchase replacement machines, to pay interest and to repay capital. A country does not get the full benefit of industrialisation until it is skilled enough to run its own plants without expatriate supervisors, has developed its own engineering industries so that its machines are made by its own people, and is saving enough out of its own income so that it no longer borrows capital from abroad. In other words, you don't get the full benefit of development until you are developed.

The moral is not to slow down industrialisation, on the ground that it contributes so little, but on the contrary to speed it up, in so far as it is contributing something to skills and to national income. For it is only by acquiring experience that Nigerians will be able to take the place of those expatriate supervisors who now get 9 per cent of value added; it is only by enlarging the use of machinery that one makes a market big enough to start one's own engineering industry; and it is only by expanding the national income that one can without hardship significantly increase the national savings.

Since the second world war most countries of the underdeveloped world have pushed industrialisation as hard as they could, except those countries like Guinea or Burma whose hostility to foreign enterprise has exceeded their commitment to development. Part of the reason for this upsurge in manufacturing is the end of colonialism, which has made it possible to develop industries in defiance of former colonial powers. But this is not the whole answer, since countries in Asia or Africa or Latin America which were not colonial before the war were not in fact industrialising any more rapidly than those which were colonial. What happened, I think, is that the *laissez faire* philosophy was finally killed by the great depression of the nineteen thirties, and by the strong support for planning of various kinds which emerged all over the world both from that depression and from the second world war. How the index of industrial production behaved last month is now front page news in every country of the world which has an index of industrial production, and if the index has not behaved well, everybody expects the government to do something about it.

I said earlier that high rates were possible temporarily because countries were substituting for imports. Now let me pursue this point.

The home demand for manufactures increases only by 6 or 7 per cent per annum; it does not grow by 10 per cent. A high rate of growth of industry is possible while you are substituting for imports, but if it goes on long enough you will soon eliminate all the imports that you can do without, and can then sustain an industrial growth rate of 10 per cent only if you can export the surplus output of manufactures. Africa is still far from this point, because her industrial production is still small in relation to her imports, but many countries of Asia and of Latin America have already reached it. These countries—for example India and Brazil—cannot continue the momentum of their industrialisation unless they can export increasing quantities of manufactures. So the underdeveloped world is beginning to say to the industrial countries: "If you won't take our coffee or tea or cotton, then you must buy our manufactures."

How quickly one exhausts the possibilities of import substitution depends on how diversified one's manufacturing becomes. If it is confined to food processing and the clothing trades, the limits of home demand will soon be reached. This is a metal-using age, so one cannot employ many people in industry unless one has the metal *using* industries. Not the metal *smelting* industries; these are relatively unimportant. It takes a lot of capital to smelt steel, and the process employs very few people. The world

market is inundated with cheap steel, so for countries which do not have cheap fuel and rich ores it is cheaper to buy steel than to make it, and one can then establish the metal using industries, which is where the employment is really to be found. Even so, countries with small populations and small incomes use relatively little metal, and cannot enjoy the economies of scale which are fundamental to these industries, so their own home markets do not take them very far in industrialisation.

Some of the larger countries have no option but to export manufactures. If you regard the agricultural problem as insoluble in the short run, as they do, then as their economies expand by 5 per cent per annum they are going to have to import a lot of food and raw materials, which they can pay for only by exporting manufactures. This should be a trivial matter. World trade in manufactures is growing by 8 per cent per annum, which is nearly as much as the amount of manufactures exported by all the underdeveloped countries added together. These countries do not need to capture anybody's existing trade. It would be more than enough to capture ten per cent of the annual *increase*. There would be no difficulty in accommodating exports of manufactures from the underdeveloped countries if they were exporting the right things. As with agriculture, so also with manufacturing: the emphasis has to be on exporting the right things, and this is the trouble.

All the underdeveloped countries want to export the same narrow lines of goods: light manufactures, especially textiles. If they exported some of everything their arrival on the market would hardly be noticed, but since they concentrate on a few lines they hurt some sectors of the industrial countries very hard, and so provoke enormous resistance. They have provoked so much resistance that in 1962 the industrial countries got together and signed an agreement limiting sharply their imports of textiles from underdeveloped countries.

The underdeveloped countries' reply to this has been to call on the industrial countries to discriminate in favour of underdeveloped countries; that is to say to adopt a tariff system in which each industrial country gives preferences to goods coming from any underdeveloped country over goods coming from any other industrial country. The proposal was originally meant to help manufactures in particular, but has now been generalised to include agricultural commodities as well. Here it has run into trouble. For example, rather surprisingly the United States has accepted the proposal; it says that it is willing to give preferences to underdeveloped countries,

although the preference system may hurt American exports of cotton, tobacco and vegetable oils. The resistance now comes mainly from those underdeveloped countries which already enjoy certain preferences—former French colonies in the common market and former British colonies in the British market—and which do not relish the idea of having to share those preferences with other countries which have previously been excluded. After all, in tropical products a preference shared with all other producers is no preference. The proposal's main value is in its possible help to manufactures.

These tensions in world trade which we have been analysing—the slow growth of demand for the former tropical staples, the mounting food deficit of developing countries, and the export of manufactures from these countries—have led to bitter exchanges between developed and developing countries in recent years, especially at the first United Nations Conference on Trade and Development held in Geneva in 1964, and at the second meeting now taking place in New Delhi. The underdeveloped countries are trying to get the developed countries to take special steps to increase the export receipts of the underdeveloped.

This position looks just a little odd in historical terms. It is true that the prosperity of underdeveloped countries has in the past depended on what they could sell to the industrial countries, but there is no reason why this should continue. The underdeveloped countries have all the resources needed for their own development. Taken together they have a surplus of fuel, fibres, iron ore, copper, bauxite, and practically every other raw material. In agriculture they are perfectly capable of feeding themselves, through exchange with each other, and do not have to beg the United States to buy more tea and coffee so that they can pay for American grain, when they could produce more grain for themselves. The underdeveloped countries are short of skills, but these can be learnt, so they could do all their own manufacturing. Apart from skills the development of Asia, Africa and Latin America could continue even if all the rest of the world were to sink under the sea. If this is so, it must mean that these countries have the solutions of their problems in their own hands, and should stop thinking all the time only in terms of what they can sell to or buy from the industrial countries.

Let me hasten to add that this proposition is reversible. It is fashionable to believe that the prosperity of the industrial countries rests on their exploitation of the underdeveloped. Actually, if you add all the exports

from Asia, Africa and Latin America together, the total comes only to  $3\frac{1}{2}$  per cent of the national incomes of the industrial countries. If Asia, Africa and Latin America were all to sink under the sea, it would make a negligible difference to the present or future prosperity of Europe and North America.

The corollary is, of course, that the underdeveloped countries should do more to develop their trade with each other. India needs to import food and can pay for it by exporting steel and machinery. Other areas should grow more food to sell to the deficit countries, and buy more of their industrial requirements from each other.

Everyone recognises that the first step towards this is to establish regional customs unions, such as for Latin America, for West Africa, and for East Africa. But progress is very slow. Every country approaches the conference table with a list of what it wants, and no willingness to give up anything. So there are innumerable meetings on customs unions in Latin America, Asia and Africa, all issuing in high-sounding phrases and splendid charters. But when it comes to putting these charters into effect, progress is very slow.

Let me now close. What emerges from this analysis, I suggest, is that there are great opportunities, but that these cannot be seized merely by doing today what you did yesterday. The opportunities are great because world trade is expanding faster than ever before. But it is a selective expansion, for food and meat and manufactures, but not for coffee or sugar or rubber. Africa can do better than Latin America or Asia in the traditional crops. Her costs are lower, so her output of these commodities will expand even if the others contract. Africa can also go quite some distance further with industrialisation based on import substitution. But for the rest of the underdeveloped world, and in due course for Africa as well, basic structural changes are inevitable, moving in agriculture more towards cereals and meat, in industry out of the lighter into the heavier manufactures, and in trade out of almost complete reliance on the markets of industrial countries into greater exchanges between the underdeveloped countries themselves. If these countries do not make these adjustments, the balance of payments difficulties from which so many already suffer will steadily strangle their growth. But if they can change to meet these changing needs, they can grow even faster than they have done in these two remarkable decades, and can at last begin to catch up on their industrial predecessors.

## 2. *The Economics of Education*

Economists have their fashions just like everybody else, and this is only too well exemplified by theories about the causes of the wealth of nations.

At the beginning of the eighteenth century the Physiocrats asserted that land was the chief source of wealth; in their theories all other activities depended on the richness of the soil. By the end of the eighteenth century the Physiocrats were driven out of favour by the classical economists, for whom the chief source of wealth was human labour, and on this they built their labour theory of value.

In the middle of the nineteenth century the ball was seized from the classical economists by Karl Marx, who sang a hymn of praise to capital, which would banish all the miseries of mankind.

By the beginning of the twentieth century the emphasis had shifted to organisation and management. This brought the human mind into the picture for the first time, but concentrated on the activities of managers.

Today the fashionable candidate is education. Under the leadership of the University of Chicago, statisticians have tried to measure precisely what proportion of economic growth is due to the various factors of production. Their answer, for what it is worth, is that in the United States increase in capital resources explains only about a half of the annual increase in production per head. They deduce that the rest is due mainly to scientific progress which they associate mainly with education.

One does not have to follow the statisticians in their speculations to recognise that the human mind has played the major role in economic progress. It is for lack of knowledge that the African farmer produces seven hundredweight of maize from an acre instead of thirty hundredweight; and for lack of knowledge that half the calves born to his cows die within their first eighteen months. In industry there would be no shortage of capital in manufacturing industry, at current wages, if the worker possessed the same skills as workers in industrial countries. The basic reason why poor countries remain poor is unquestionably because they lack knowledge.

Yet it does not follow that the most important use for capital is to invest it in building schools. Education and schools are not the same thing. What goes on inside the schools is not always education, and the result may well be to reduce productive capacity rather than to increase it. Conversely much education occurs outside the school; in the family, on the job, through apprenticeship, or by means of adult programmes in agriculture, health, and other forms of community development. Expenditure on



## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

schools must fit itself into a wide programme for increasing and spreading knowledge, tailored to the particular needs of each society.

### Absorptive Capacity

One major difference between the United States and the underdeveloped countries is the apparently unlimited American capacity to absorb the products of schools. In the southern regions of Nigeria where only 3 per cent of children finish secondary school, unemployment of secondary school leavers is already causing concern, as it has done for years in India, where only 10 per cent of children customarily finished secondary school. Yet there is no such problem in the United States where at least half the children finish programmes appropriate to university matriculation. Twenty years ago, when only 15 per cent of Americans got bachelor's degrees, people were already beginning to wonder what they would all do. But the number has already accelerated to 25 per cent, and there is no sign of surplus in the market. The American economy can absorb whatever numbers the schools may turn out.

Why is the American economy able to absorb so many, while Asian and African economies can take only few school leavers without quickly running into unemployment? There are two basic reasons.

First, the premium paid for education is much lower in advanced economies. In England a young university graduate starts with a salary less than that of a miner. But in Nigeria, where I was teaching two years ago, a university graduate expects to be paid as much as six miners. It is the same in the United States. A young man leaving the university with a bachelor's degree gets \$6,000 a year in New York; but the wage of a garbage collector in New York City is \$8,000 a year, with the right to retire on half pay after 25 years of service.

Educated people are therefore relatively cheap in advanced economies, and therefore they can be used in a very wide range of jobs. You can use an engineering graduate for jobs which in poor countries have to be done by mechanics and are therefore not done so well. You can also afford to provide much more of the kind of service which uses professional people. Take education itself. To provide universal primary education in the United States costs less than 1 per cent of the national income, whereas in Nigeria one would have to tax away about 3 per cent of the national income

to provide universal primary education. The main reason is that a teacher earns less than an average income in America, whereas in Nigeria a teacher earns twice the average income. It is the same with the cost of running the government service. The British and the Americans give themselves excellent administrative services, education, health, roads, and so on for about 9 per cent of national income, excluding defence. Most African countries spend much more than this for not more than a half of the service. Why? Because the average African civil servant demands the income of three average Africans, whereas the average British or American civil servant receives only the average income.

So the first reason why Africa can absorb so few educated people is that educated people cost so much. The second reason is that their job expectations are so high. For example, I mentioned that the United States is absorbing bachelor's degrees to the extent of 30 per cent of the age group. The British are absorbing now about 8 per cent of the age group. Nigeria is producing less than 1 per cent of the age group with bachelor's degrees. Yet my students at Ibadan were already very worried that they would not find jobs. "How come?" I asked. "There is an unlimited demand for secondary school teachers, and business wants more and more graduates." "Oh, No," they said, "We want jobs in the civil service; the pay and prestige of secondary school teachers is not enough." One of the reasons for unemployment of the educated is that their expectations are too high. University graduates do not want to be secondary school teachers. Graduates from the secondary schools do not want to be nurses, or elementary school teachers, or agricultural assistants. So they hang around waiting for something to turn up.

Yet the way that education raises the productivity of an economy is by employing educated people lower and lower in the hierarchy; or by raising the qualifications required for each job, which is just another way of saying the same thing. When the educated are scarce, primary school teachers are recruited from the primary schools; as the educated become more plentiful, one must first have secondary education to become a primary school teacher; as they become more plentiful yet, the elementary school teacher is being required to take a bachelor's degree. Each generation coming out of the schools must expect to start lower down than its predecessors.

The high productivity of the American economy, in contrast with the poor performances of Britain and Continental Europe, is mainly due to the fact that the large number educated in the United States has forced the

educated lower and lower down in the productive hierarchy, and has therefore raised productivity in the middle as well as at the top. Thus, if one compares Britain with the U.S.A., the top 5 per cent and the bottom 60 per cent are about equally well educated, but in the 6th to 40th percentiles the Americans are better educated than the British. This is one reason for the observation frequently made, that whereas the British come up with new fundamental ideas as often as the Americans (per thousand of population) the Americans are much better at developing and applying new ideas, because their intermediate and supervisory classes are so much better educated. Largely for reasons of social snobbery, the British grossly underestimate the proportion of their community who could benefit from some form of higher education. This brings up the question of the varieties of higher education (i.e., beyond the age of 18), to which I shall return in a moment.

Education cannot spread downwards into the economic hierarchy if the educated insist on limiting their horizons and keeping up their salary differentials. The current situation in Africa is viewed with anger by many writers today. They fasten on the very high incomes of people in the towns (frequently 2:1 for unskilled labour, with a steep pyramid on top of that). They see that these incomes are taken from the farmers by taxation and high prices. As they see it, what the schools are producing is a class of robbers who have seized the African farmer by the throat and are forcing him to maintain the people who have come out of the schools at the rate of two or four or ten farmers for each member of the educated classes. Franz Fanon, who is one of the folk heroes of the third world intellectuals, for his dramatic book, *The Wretched of the Earth*, has even called for the African farmers to rise up against this conspiracy of graduates from schools riding on their backs.

When an economist views the same situation, what he sees is simply the ordinary working of the forces of demand and supply. Educated people are relatively much more scarce in Africa, so naturally they cost relatively more. The situation is produced by shortage of supply, and will end itself naturally with abundance of supply.

What distinguishes the present situation in Africa from the early days of development in Western Europe is the fact that education began at a different point in the hierarchy. Two centuries and more ago the Europeans gave primary education to very few. They concentrated relatively much more effort on secondary and university education, to provide their

societies with clerical and administrative skills. Since the schools produced all the educated people they needed, the educated were always relatively cheap.

Africa began at the other end. Until very recently there were no universities, and only a handful of secondary schools. Most of the effort went into primary education. It was therefore necessary to import Europeans to do the jobs which needed graduates of universities and secondary schools, and since these had to be paid more than they could earn at home, Africa was endowed with a wage and salary structure which is far and away the most unequal in the world — much worse than in Asia, where secondary and university education have been flooding the market for half a century. At the same time, the shortage of secondary school graduates created a demand for primary school graduates to do clerical work at relatively high salaries. So the tradition was established that the primary schoolboy looks for a white collar job in town, and expects to be paid twice as much as his farmer father's income.

This is a most unfortunate historical legacy, but the situation will change automatically as the schools pour out more and more young people onto the market. Their salaries will then fall relatively to the farmer's earnings. They may fall absolutely; but what is more likely in this inflationary age is rather that salaries will not rise as rapidly as prices and as the incomes of the classes now at the bottom. This has always been so. The relative position of the middle classes has been eroded steadily in all developed countries. Fifty years ago, for example, the wife of a university professor used to debate whether to have one servant or two. Now in the developed countries she cannot afford a single servant and is even herself sometimes looking for work. Indeed one can tell how prosperous a country is by listening to the conversations of middle-class wives at cocktail parties; if they are complaining bitterly how scarce and expensive the servants are, you know that economic development is going rather well.

The process is inevitable, if painful and dangerous. It is painful because it requires that the young people coming out of schools and universities continually adjust their expectations downwards, and this is a frustrating process. It is dangerous because this frustration may erupt politically. Fascist-type movements find fertile soil in young people coming out of schools and universities and not finding the kinds of jobs which they are looking for. Educational unemployment is a potentially explosive factor, and this is why conservative rulers have always tried to keep the numbers

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

receiving schooling down to what they thought their societies would be able to absorb. Besides this consideration, many African governments are trying to discover what their absorptive capacity is for the simple reason that education in their countries is so expensive that it is simply not feasible to provide it free to everybody who could qualify for it intellectually.

### High Level Manpower

A series of studies has now been made for African countries assessing their requirements for skilled manpower. The resulting figures are small. At present the capacity to absorb new university graduates in any year does not exceed one per cent of the number of young people reaching the age of twenty one in that year; and the capacity to absorb secondary school products is only about five per cent. That the figures are so small is not surprising. More than half the population is in small-scale agriculture, which absorbs very few persons with secondary or university education. And the graduates cost so much, in relation to the national income, that only relatively small numbers can be afforded.

There is now consensus that the chief bottleneck in Africa is secondary education. The number of jobs requiring a university graduate in science, engineering, or some other profession is relatively small. As the number of Bachelors of Arts multiplies, the surplus goes into administration and commerce to do jobs which can be done pretty well in any case with only a secondary education. One also needs secondary school products for a range of jobs which, in their absence, tend to go to the products of primary schools, with significantly less efficient performance — such jobs as secretaries, nurses, elementary school teachers, agricultural assistants, medical technicians, and so on. The best way to raise the general level of performance in any economy is to keep on pouring out more and more youngsters through the secondary schools.

This applies just as much to business as to other forms of administration. Most African countries are deeply concerned over the poor performance of African business, in competition with the business activities of immigrants. One of the reasons is that among the numerous skills which it takes to be a good businessman are some which one gets only from completing a secondary education. Fluency with writing and with figures is one of these, since many small businesses go down because the record keeping is

so bad that the businessman has no mental control over stocks, purchases, sales, credits and debits. One also matures a lot between fourteen and eighteen, and is better prepared for life by maturing in the disciplined and analytic atmosphere of a secondary school than by working as an office boy for some indifferent employer. So the best way to improve the level of African business is to pour so many boys through the secondary schools that some youngsters are forced to go into business if they are not to remain unemployed.

Viewed from this angle, the capacity of African economies to benefit from producing more secondary school graduates is virtually "unlimited" at the present time (meaning by "unlimited" a rise to somewhere between ten and twenty per cent of the age group as compared with the current "fifth form" output of from one to three per cent). It may be necessary to watch closely the numbers entering the universities, or the numbers entering the primary schools, but secondary schools should be multiplied as fast as possible. Of course one should also watch their curricula, to ensure that a sufficient proportion have an adequate technical background. And if one is to use the secondary school boys and girls, one must also have the further institutions which will give them specialised post-secondary training — the farm schools, the secretarial schools, the nursing schools, the technical schools, and so on.

Let me say a word about these post-secondary training institutions. One should note, first, that their viability depends on the country having an adequate programme of general secondary education. In the absence of such a programme these schools have to recruit from the primary schools instead of from the secondary schools, and their products (the secretaries, school teachers, agricultural assistants, medical technicians, etc.) are simply not up to the required standard. Moreover, the wastage from the specialised institutions is then high, in the sense that a large proportion of the students who go through the specialised training do not use it, but go into business or on to the university. They have used the technical training school merely as a substitute for secondary education, as a way up the ladder, without any intention of using the technical knowledge imparted to them at such cost. It is frequently suggested that the failure of the specialised institutions in these circumstances is due to their products being paid inadequate salaries; and from this it is argued that these intermediate salaries should be raised. But to raise salaries is to reduce the economy's absorptive capacity of a whole intermediate class

of people whose inadequate number is a prime cause of the economy's low productivity. My approach sees instead a deficiency of supply. The remedy is not to raise wages, but to put so many through the general secondary schools that the young people coming out of those schools will be glad to flood the post-secondary institutions and acquire the specialised training that will give them the edge in finding jobs.

As soon as one begins to do this a new problem emerges, namely, competition between the universities and the post-secondary training institutions. (This brings us into the area of the different varieties of higher education which I mentioned earlier.) Since the university graduate gets more prestige and higher pay, young people who have completed secondary education prefer to go to a degree-granting college rather than to a training institution. If this is permitted without restraint the universities swell with students of Arts, Economics and Law, while there is a shortage of people with post-secondary technical training. This is a familiar phenomenon in Asia, where the universities are bulging with liberal arts students, with such high student/teacher ratios that the quality of the education has grossly deteriorated, while trained technicians are in short supply.

Britain and the United States have approached this problem differently. Britain imposes very high entry standards into her universities, and keeps the number of places so small that many students who pass the entrance examinations simply cannot get in. They are thus forced into the training institutes. (The total supply for post-secondary institutes and universities is also too small, as we have already noted, but this is a separate issue.) The United States has instead created colleges and universities which have taken into themselves the work of the training institutes, and will give you a degree in hotel catering or (so it is said) mortuary science. Thus the technical occupations are made more attractive by throwing over them the umbrella of a Bachelor's degree.

West Africa hankers after the British system, notwithstanding the American "experiment" at Nsukka. But if the British system is to work, the universities must keep high entry standards, and tightly control the size of the Faculties of Arts, Law and Social Science; also the post-secondary institutions must be adequate in number and variety. It is very doubtful whether African politics and the hunger for the prestige of a Bachelor's degree will allow the British system of tight controls to work. If it does not, the African universities will head in the same tragic direction as the Asian universities. It would then have been better to adopt the American model,

in which practically every kind of post-secondary training qualifies for some kind of bachelor's degree.

The upshot of this analysis is that an unlimited output of secondary school products is not enough. One must also ensure that this does not simply lead to a flood of liberal arts graduates from the universities, and this requires firm measures to ensure an adequate intake into training facilities.

### Primary Education

When we turn to primary education, we are on more difficult ground. Nobody doubts that a literate population is more productive than an illiterate one. If Africa's farmers were literate the task of raising their productivity would be much easier. We know how to double or treble the yields of grain with better seeds, fertilisers and pesticides; we know how to improve livestock, how to reduce the losses of crops during storage, and a score of other techniques that could double the farmers' output. If they had been to school and had learnt not only how to write and how to count, but also some of the elementary principles of natural science, the agricultural extension services would get results much faster and more cheaply. So there is no doubt that the economy would be more productive if everybody had completed a primary education.

The problems come from the transition; from making too rapid a passage from having only 20 per cent in school to having 100 per cent in school. In any country this would raise problems of quality, since the number of qualified teachers cannot be multiplied rapidly, but this is not a decisive consideration if one agrees that some education is better than none. In Africa this swift transition has raised the additional and more negative problem of the effect of frustrated expectations. For, in a country where only 10 per cent of children finish primary school, and there are virtually no secondary schools, any boy who finishes primary school is assured of a clerical job in town at a high salary. The primary school is thus established in the minds of parents and children as a route to a white collar urban job. But when 50 per cent are finishing primary school, and in addition a new flow of secondary school boys is taking the clerical jobs, and the jobs for elementary school teachers, the primary school graduate can no longer find this kind of work. However, it takes time for people to



recognise that times have changed. For some years the primary school graduates continue to make a beeline for the towns, where they become unemployed. Depopulation of youth from the countryside, coupled with heavy unemployment in the towns, is now standard in most African countries which have been accelerating primary education. One starts off opening up schools in rural areas in the hope of having literate farmers, and finds that instead the effect is that the brighter minds simply emigrate from the countryside into unemployment.

It is quite easy to see that the unemployment problem cannot be solved if all the young people emigrate to the towns. One approaches this through measuring the absorptive capacity of occupations other than agriculture. In a country like Nigeria, 70 per cent of the people are in agriculture. Only 30 per cent are outside agriculture. How fast can this 30 per cent grow? If one allows for this sector to grow by at most 5 per cent per annum, and throws in another 4 per cent recruitment to replace those who retire or die or marry, the non-agricultural sector can take in each year a number of people equal to about 9 per cent of itself. This comes to 2.7 per cent of the labour force, or to rather less than 1 per cent of the population, whereas the number of youngsters reaching age 15 and wishing to join the labour force is rather more than 2 per cent of the population every year. It follows that the modern sector cannot take in even half the youngsters who reach age 15. More than half must stay in agriculture, or rising urban unemployment will be inevitable.

It is also the case that more than half are needed in agriculture to supply the food and raw material requirements of a rapidly urbanising population. The old argument about whether growth should come through industry or through agriculture has been displaced by recognition of the need for balanced growth. For, if you approach the problem by asking what happens to demand as income grows, the answer is that demand increases for both industrial and agricultural products. As a country industrialises, pressure is placed on agricultural supplies. If, at the other extreme, the farmers produced more food without urbanisation taking place, they would go bankrupt for want of expanding markets. Countries can escape from balanced growth only in so far as they can easily expand their international trade. Those which have tried to industrialise without expanding their agricultural production adequately have found themselves with severe balance of payments problems.

Now if unemployment were caused only by the false expectations of

school leavers, it would be a serious transitional problem, but the transition would soon end. For, it would not take long for school leavers to discover that there were no more clerical jobs for them in the towns, and they would adjust their expectations downwards. Evidence that the downward adjustment has already occurred is provided by writers who have made surveys among school leavers in Nigeria in the 1960's, and who have reported that the youngsters now hold quite realistic views of the kinds of jobs now open to them.

The real causes of continued unemployment in West Africa lie elsewhere. One aspect is the failure of employment to grow as rapidly in the modern sector as one would expect, having regard to the high levels of investment. This situation is found widely in the underdeveloped world. Thanks to the relatively large amounts available in foreign aid and foreign investment, net investment has been very high in relation to national income. In fact the developing countries are investing today a larger proportion of national income than the British or the Americans have ever invested in their economies. One would therefore expect rapid growth of employment in the modern sectors. Why has this not taken place?

One reason is that so much capital is just wasted. I do not have to detail for you in this country the innumerable ways in which money can be wasted: they all fall into one of two categories—either building things which shouldn't be built, or building useful things but spending on them too elaborately. There is a good deal of the former—building useless objects—but most of the waste is in the latter, or over-elaborate category. Elaborate spending may result in beautiful works which delight the eye and add to the nation's sense of its own prestige. These are advantages. On the other hand, the cost is that a sum of money which, wisely spent, might have provided permanent jobs for one hundred men, provides jobs instead only for fifty. Undoubtedly one reason why so much investment yields so little employment is that those who plan the spending ask almost every question except: how many new permanent jobs is this spending going to create. There should be a parliamentary rule requiring the Development Plan to answer this question for every project which it includes.

But even if all the money were spent wisely, the modern sector could not expand fast enough to cope with the current drift into the towns. The fundamental reason for this is the big gap which has now opened up between urban wages and the farmers' incomes. Over the past ten years agricultural prices have been falling, and in some cases the farmers have

had to pay even higher export taxes. Urban wages on the other hand have been rising all the time, though not so spectacularly in Ghana as in other African countries. An unskilled labourer in Lagos, in full employment, is paid twice as much as the average farmer earns. The fundamental explanation of heavy migration and unemployment is this big gap in incomes. Moreover, the gap is not confined to personal earnings, for there is an even bigger gap in public services. The governments levy heavy taxes on the farmers and use the money to provide water supplies, medical services, secondary schools, electricity and transport not in rural areas but in the towns. In these circumstances any young man who stayed in the countryside instead of migrating to the towns ought to have his head examined. There is no prospect of preventing unemployment from piling up in the towns unless there is a fairer distribution of income between town and country.

Towns always have a fair amount of unemployment because several industries rely on casual labour, and keep a larger resource of labour than they need at any one time. This is especially true of the building industry, the docks, transportation, mining, and other industries where men are hired and paid by the day. As the British dockers discovered immediately after the great strike which recognised their union in 1889, raising wages in casual trades does not raise the worker's income. For the higher wages are, the greater the number of men attracted to look for work, and therefore the smaller the number of days for which each man works. The flow of labour into and out of casual trades is the mechanism which regulates the drift of labour from the towns into the country. The higher the wage, the more men will come, and the less work each will have. For any given wage some kind of equilibrium will exist between the amount of open unemployment in the towns and of disguised unemployment in the countryside. This equilibrium has been disturbed in Africa by the continuous upward movement of wages in the towns in recent years, in the face of falling agricultural prices, and there is nothing one can do to prevent unemployment from increasing if this gap is allowed to widen more and more.

One half of the gap is due to falling agriculture prices; the other half is due to the success of the urban trade unions, especially those of people in government employment, in getting large wage increases at regular intervals. For example, in Nigeria urban wages have trebled since 1950, and are now eight times what they were in 1939. This is a somewhat puzzling

phenomenon. Everybody knows that the money with which the governments pay wages comes out of taxes on the farmers in one way or another; everybody knows that the urban workers are already much better off than the farmers; and everybody knows that there are ten times as many farmers as government workers, with potentially ten times as many votes. Nevertheless the trade unions are able to intimidate the governments. They have not intimidated all the governments. Generally speaking the unions have been more successful in West Africa than in East Africa. In West Africa the unions still pass as representatives of the underdog, meriting sympathy, whereas in East Africa leaders like Mr. Nyerere and Mr. Kenyatta have not hesitated to make the point that the unions represent only a small sectional interest of people who are very well off when compared with the great mass of the population, and on this ground they have curtailed the power of the unions to impose their will against the government by striking.

The question of the role of trade unions in an economy which wishes to grow rapidly is now under review all over the world. The unions are interested in raising consumption now, whereas the government wishes to restrain consumption in order to increase savings. Unions also tend to oppose new methods and new machines which may steal away their jobs, so they build up a mass of restrictive practices for job protection; whereas the government is interested in new investment, new methods and higher productivity. As soon as Stalin adopted a Five Year Plan for rapid economic growth, he effectively liquidated the Russian trade unions, and his example has been followed by every communist country. The Western democracies now seem to be following the same road, by imposing incomes policies, guidelines, wage freezes, cooling off injunctions, prohibitions on strikes in public employment, and other steady moves in the same direction. And in Asia and Latin America a majority of governments have already deprived their unions of power, for all practical purposes. The age of trade union power is drawing to its end. I doubt that West Africa can escape this trend, if high priority is to be given to saving and to economic growth.

What West Africa now needs is to keep urban incomes under tight restraint for the next few years, while raising agricultural incomes, otherwise unemployment will continue to mount.

The way to raise agricultural incomes is not to raise food prices, since this would simply set off bigger demands for wage and salary increases,

but to raise the productivity of the farmers, while cutting distribution costs.

We know that this can be achieved since we already have examples of it here in Africa. I am not referring only to the technical possibilities for raising yields with better seeds, fertilisers and so on. The problem has been to persuade the farmers to adopt these new techniques. This certainly cannot be done without massive effort: without the farm schools for training both farmers' sons and agricultural extension agents; without a network of specialists standing behind the extension agents; without a system for distributing cheaply to the farmers the new seeds, the fertilisers and the pesticides which he must now use. The fact that so little has happened to African productivity is clearly attributable in most countries to the inadequacy of the measures adopted. Occasionally it is suggested that the failure lies in the response of the farmers rather than in the inadequacy of the help, but it would be most surprising if African farmers refused to absorb new techniques, since their counterparts in Asia, working on equally small farms, are shooting ahead. In Japan, where the high rice yields are notorious, the average farm is only two acres. From Japan, Formosa, the Phillipines, Pakistan and northwestern India we have been getting continuous news of the rising yields from the small farms. And now we are getting equally good news from those African countries which have been making the effort, including Kenya, Rhodesia ("master farmers") and Senegal (*animation rurale*).

West Africa has instead passed through a phase of rejecting the small African farmer, on the ground that he is too backward and illiterate to be the basis of a revolution in agricultural techniques. Instead the governments have put millions of money into starting huge state farms, based on mechanisation. So far all these mechanised farms have failed for one or more reasons. The chief reason is that to run a large mechanised farm of several thousand acres one must be able to rely on a first-class mechanical organisation, which will bring in a faulty machine immediately and get it back into the field with minimum delay; otherwise the amount of equipment one needs and the cost of maintaining it become excessive. Perhaps private enterprise could lick this problem, but no African government has yet succeeded, including the British government itself which first launched these experiments. Then beyond the mechanical problem, as you try to open up new country you run into the uncertainties of cultivation in new areas whose rainfall patterns, soils, and pests are unknown; also the difficulty of recruiting and holding a labour force in sparsely populated

country. I have no doubt that such experiments should continue on a moderate scale. But I have also no doubt that the main thrust of agricultural policy should be directed to work with small farmers, and no doubt that if adequate, this work will pay off handsomely.

I may seem to have strayed from my subject, the Economics of Education, by getting into agricultural productivity, but this is by no means the case. In the first place, I began this talk by pointing out that education is not confined to what goes on inside the schoolhouse. Education of adults and education on the job are just as important as education of youngsters in primary schools. In fact we reached our present topic by asking whether education in rural schools is not at present destructive, by turning youngsters away from agriculture and causing them to drift into unemployment in the towns. I have suggested that while this used to be so it is no longer so; the main cause of the drift to towns must be sought elsewhere. Nevertheless, if funds are limited, one is entitled to ask whether it would be better to spend more money on having more rural schools, or more money on having an adequate programme of agricultural education. While recording my vote for more of both, I would unhesitatingly, in West Africa today, accord the higher priority to agricultural education and extension.

The topic is also relevant to the economics of education because the rural schools cannot fulfil their purpose — which is to prepare youngsters for rural life — if rural incomes are so low in comparison with urban incomes that rural youngsters go off to the towns to live in part-time employment by casual labour. West Africa has now got itself into a box by disturbing drastically the equilibrium between urban and rural incomes, and nothing will come right, not even educational programmes, until this fundamental disequilibrium is redressed.

### 3. *Development Planning*

Making Development Plans is the most popular activity of the governments of underdeveloped countries since the war, and is also nearly their biggest failure.

The popularity of this activity cannot be doubted. Nearly every government has issued at least one Plan, and most governments have issued several. The books they issue have more and more pages, more and more statistics, and more and more forecasts and promises. The decision whether to make a new Plan is no longer left to their discretion, for those who give aid, especially the World Bank and the United States government, demand to see such Plans, and take the line more or less that a government without a Development Plan is not worthy of assistance.

There is no doubt about the failure of these Plans. Most Development Plans are put aside soon after they are made; they rest on the shelf, not consulted even by the officials who have made them. A Plan which actually controls government actions for as long as three years is the exception rather than the rule, and must be regarded as a great success, since any Plan would need substantial revision by the end of three years. Much more common is the Plan which everybody has forgotten by the end of the first year, and has rightly forgotten, since it was never meant to determine action. This is bound to happen to any Plan which is made primarily for propaganda reasons. The object is then to write down as large figures as one can think of—the billions of dollars one hopes to spend on innumerable projects, the high rates of growth of output which one promises to bring about and so on. Everybody who reads such Plans recognises that they are pure political phantasy, so it is not surprising that nobody takes them seriously after the original fanfares with which they are published.

The second index of the failure of planning is that there has been no correlation between development planning and economic growth. That is to say, the countries which have grown most rapidly have not been the countries which have had the most elaborate Plans. Planning has been rudimentary or non-existent in such rapidly growing economies as those of Brazil, Mexico, Japan, Ivory Coast, Nigeria or Peru. On the other hand, we have had most elaborate Plans from India, Senegal and Tanzania, whose rates of growth are quite unspectacular.

The reason for this is fairly obvious. Rates of growth have depended primarily on the private sector—on the farmers producing more, on businessmen building factories, and on the mines expanding their investments. If these sectors do not find conditions favourable for expansion,



no amount of expenditure by the governments on the public services will bring significant economic growth. Since the planners do not control the farmers or the businessmen, they cannot plan the rate of growth. If the farmers and businessmen find conditions favourable to growth, the economy will go ahead rapidly whether or not the government publishes a Development Plan.

From this one can deduce the legitimate role of a Development Plan, which is to help create conditions favourable for growth. If the Plan does this it is good; if it does not, it is irrelevant to growth, however elaborate it may be.

The earliest Development Plans did not pretend to be able to control the rate of economic growth, or even to predict what it would be. Their objective was more modest, namely, simply to bring order into the planning and execution of government expenditures. This is without question desirable. Planning forced each government agency or department to reconsider its objectives, both in the short run and in the long run. The objectives of all the departments taken together would add up to more money than was available. Governments were thus forced to adopt priorities, and also to coordinate the frequently inconsistent plans of different agencies. The value of this planning exercise depends on its realism, since priorities are necessary only if one decides to limit the programme to what is feasible. If you make a Development Plan by writing down everything the country needs, then there are no choices and no priorities; but there is also no guidance to those who control the spending of the funds, so the Plan is useless.

It was natural for Development Plans to spread over from controlling public expenditure into the wider area of promoting economic growth, since the quality of the public services affects what happens in the private sector. There are two links between the private and public sectors, depending on where the initiative originates. First, the private sector uses public services, ranging from electricity to prisons, so some sort of projection of the likely growth of the private sector is needed for planning public activity. Secondly, and in the reverse direction, the public sector can stimulate the private sector in various ways, not only by providing services, such as agricultural education, geological survey, or industrial loans, but also through various types of policy, such as price policy, taxation, devaluation of the currency, subsidies, reform of marketing structures, new legislation on land tenure, and so on and on. Besides, the public sector

can also substitute for the private, so that if, for example, the farmers fail to exploit some new technique, or the industrialists are not willing to build some particular factory, the government may step in and act as a pioneer, whether permanently or temporarily. The second stage of development planning is therefore to review all the problems of the economy, whether private or public, and to plan to take whatever measures may be needed to stimulate growth. This was essentially the approach of those who were engaged in drafting Ghana's Second Development Plan. This is also the kind of planning which the World Bank is looking for, where the emphasis is about equally on a broad review of economic policies and on a detailed scanning of the costs and benefits of projected government expenditures.

Some practitioners of development planning ask for more. They seek target figures for the output of each industry in the private sector five or ten years from now. Using the sophisticated techniques of national income accounting, input-output matrices and linear programming, it is possible to make a detailed model of the economy for, say, the year 1975, showing exactly what would be produced, sold for home consumption, exported and put into stocks, if one is prepared to make enough guesses and assumptions. I have made such a hypothetical plan in my book on *Development Planning* to give the general reader a glimpse of the sort of procedures which economists use for such an exercise. But it requires no knowledge of economics or mathematics or any other discipline to know that, since the future is unpredictable, even the most brilliant mathematician cannot say what will or should be produced in 1975. To pass from general measures for stimulating growth to quantitative predictions of the output of every industry, is to jump an unjumpable gulf. The supreme example of the difficulty of making such predictions is represented by the British Five Year Plan, which was published with a great fanfare in 1965, and of which no more has been heard since the first month after its publication, as it had been rendered out of date even before it could get off the printing presses. That this was the fate of the British Plan, despite all the statistics and expertise available to the government, helps us to sympathise with the makers of Ghana's Third Development Plan.

Much of the passion for these statistical exercises, which swept through the ranks of the younger economists during the first half of the nineteen sixties, derived from misunderstandings about planning in the Soviet Union.

In the first place, there was a misunderstanding of objectives. When the Soviet Plan says that so many million tons of nails will be produced in 1968 it is issuing a command. Each Soviet enterprise which makes nails will receive an instruction telling it how many nails to make, how many men to hire for the purpose, which bank is authorized to give it how much credit, and to which outlets it will sell its nails. We need not now discuss the merits of this procedure, since the Soviet economists, and many Soviet administrators, are already condemning it for the same reasons that non-Soviet economists have always condemned it. The point here is that whether good or bad, this command system bears no relationship to the statistical exercises of the underdeveloped economies. If the Development Plan for Senegal were to announce how many million tons of nails should be produced in 1968 it would not be commanding anybody to do anything and nobody would take any notice of it. The Soviet economy is a command economy; the planning techniques it uses are not relevant to an economy where ninety per cent of production is done in enterprises over which the government has no direct control.

Is there then no point in trying to forecast what the economy may look like, say, five years from now? This does not follow, despite the impossibility of correct forecasting, and the absence of means of enforcement.

In the first place such a forecast can be helpful to all who have to make decisions about the future, whether in the private or the public sector. Everybody who makes an investment is acting on his own long-range plan. The success of each person's plan depends on the others; whether the plans of those who make steel for sale will be realised over the next twenty years depends partly on the plans now being made by the agencies which will be buying steel over the next twenty years. "Indicative planning" (as these economy-wide forecasts are called) supplies each decision maker with the central planners' view of what may happen to the economy as a whole if plans are consistent. If the central planners have done their job efficiently, in consultation with the large public and private decision makers, their view of the future must help each individual agency, private or public, to improve its own forecasts.

The process of indicative planning can also reveal the bottlenecks likely to constrain growth. One can estimate what the demand for each major group of commodities or resources (labour, capital, foreign exchange, raw materials) is likely to be five years from now, if one postulates that income will be, say, twenty per cent larger, and can follow the reper-

cussions of this throughout the economy. The result will suggest to private entrepreneurs opportunities for investment which may not otherwise have been obvious; and will suggest to the government action required to equilibrate supply with demand, ranging from changes in prices (e.g., exchange rates, food prices) to government investment in pioneer industries. Thus a good "indicative" plan should make possible more investment and more relevant government policies than would otherwise occur.

Ultimately, the value of "indicative" planning in a mixed economy depends on several factors. First it depends on the quantity and quality of available statistics. India or France can make useful indicative plans, but most countries of sub-Saharan Africa do not possess the necessary statistical framework. Secondly, the usefulness of the Plan depends on how complicated the economy may be. Elaborate statistical analysis may help if the various sectors of the economy are closely inter-related, but in simple economies it will tell you nothing that you could not already see for yourself. Finally the value of the exercise depends on the planners not taking the results too seriously, because they are conscious of the wide range of possible error. If you are making a programme for a private enterprise economy, its essence lies not in the targets which you adopt for each industry, but in the measures which are taken to promote private activity — such measures as research, information, subsidies, price guarantees, tariffs, loans and so on. The emphasis is therefore on economic policy rather than on figures. If the policies are right production will be increased; if they are wrong it will not.

I said that the passion for statistical exercises derived in the first place from failure to understand the difference in mechanisms between a command economy and a mixed economy. The second misunderstanding is even more fundamental. This is the belief that the rapid growth of Soviet industrial production was due to centralised planning of production. This is an error. The real explanation of the high growth rates of communist countries is twofold:

First, their governments have a large surplus of public revenue over administration costs with which they are able to finance very high rates of investment in human and physical resources. Thus the Soviet government was taking, during its first Five Year Plan, about 37 per cent of the national income, and after spending 6 per cent on defence and 12 per cent on other recurrent expenditure, had a surplus of around 19 per cent of the national income to invest in capital formation. Any government which can spend

30 per cent of the national income on civilian needs and capital formation can drive the economy forward at a rapid pace, provided that it also meets the second condition of communist success, which is:

Administrative capacity. Partly because of the large number of persons with secondary and higher education, and partly because of the discipline of the Communist Party, the communist governments are able to implement, more or less efficiently, every reasonable enterprise on which they embark. In this they differ significantly from the governments of underdeveloped countries whose inefficiency and corruption nearly always ensures a wide gap between intention and performance.

The marginal relevance of centralised planning is now widely admitted in the communist countries themselves. China's experience is a good illustration. The government of China procured a rapid development of China's output in the first half of the 1950's without an effective Plan, by taking 30 per cent of the national income, and after spending a diminishing proportion on defence and other current items, being left with a surplus of up to 13 per cent of national income to contribute to investment in capital formation.

It follows that the most important part of any Development Plan is not its macroeconomic projections, its output targets, or its list of government projects. It is the part of the Plan which shows how the government proposes to raise the money and to recruit the personnel to carry out its objectives. Money and personnel are the two prime weaknesses of development programmes in underdeveloped countries, and I shall concentrate on these two for the rest of this lecture.

### **Personnel**

Let me begin with personnel. In a mixed economy the administrative problem is somewhat different from what it is in a communist command economy. Both systems share a need for competent and experienced people. But whereas in the communist economy all the administrators are on the public payroll, in the mixed economy only a minority are on the public payroll as civil servants or administrators of public enterprises. The majority are in the private sector running private firms. About civil servants I shall speak in a later lecture. Today I wish to concentrate on management

in private enterprise, since it is here that the rate of growth of the mixed economy is determined.

Nearly all underdeveloped countries suffer from a shortage of competent business managers. This is simply a historical phenomenon. It will right itself in time as development proceeds.

What does one do in the interim? One can import foreigners. Or one can put Africans into managerial jobs for which they are not competent. Or, like Mali or Tanzania, one can just let the economy stagnate. I do not propose to argue the respective merits of these three solutions, each of which has wide political repercussions. I shall confine myself to analyzing some of the consequences of the first, namely reliance on foreign business talent for economic development.

The subject divides itself into two parts, big business and small business. There is not much argument about big business. Africans do not at present have experience of running large industrial enterprises, so the choice is between importing foreign businessmen or not having large scale industrialisation. Faced with this choice, very few hesitate. Hostility to capitalism has never prevented Stalin, Kosygin, Sekou Toure or any other intelligent socialist leader from inviting foreign concerns to come into his country and start some large industrial undertaking which was beyond the local competence. The latest example is Kosygin's invitation to Fiat to build a motor car factory in Russia.

Reasonable argument is not about whether to invite foreign firms, but about the terms of the contract. These vary all the way from complete private enterprise at one end, to the government putting up all the money at the other end and hiring the foreign concern only in a managerial capacity. These contracts become ever more sophisticated. There are governments which favour foreign private enterprise but which are forced to put up a lot of their own capital because the foreign firm refuses to come unless the government becomes at least an equal partner. The terms have to be negotiated in each case on a supply and demand basis. A pre-determination to insist on this or that principle can easily result in failure if no competent foreign firm will accept the conditions demanded.

Far and away the most important condition to impose is rapid Africanisation of supervisory and administrative personnel. Every new business should be seen primarily as a school in which Africans learn how to do the job for themselves. If Africans will not be given the chance to learn, foreign business fails in its most important contribution. This is now

recognised all round, and is therefore seldom a problem in principle, though the practice is not without friction.

The case of foreigners in small business is much more complicated. This phenomenon is widespread in Asia and Africa, and cannot be understood unless one sees it in historical perspective.

The rapid development of the tropical world really began in the last quarter of the nineteenth century. Three elements fostered it. First the revolution in shipbuilding, with the passage to iron, steam, and the screw propeller, which between them reduced shipping freights by two-thirds, and made it possible for the first time to carry heavy cargoes cheaply over thousands of miles. Secondly, the coming of the railway to the tropics, which did the same for internal transport; without the railway tropical development could not have passed beyond the seacoast. And, thirdly, the rapid industrialisation of Western Europe and North America, accelerating after 1880, and creating a rapidly expanding demand for tropical products.

These new possibilities led to, and were accompanied by, a considerable migration of members of traditionally trading communities into tropical areas which had hitherto functioned only as subsistence economies. The Chinese swarmed over South-east Asia; the Indian traders opened up Burma, and then East Africa; Syrians and Lebanese moved into West Africa. And at a later stage the Ibos of Southern Nigeria, having learnt the techniques of trading, moved north into the Muslim states in large numbers. There is no doubt that these traders performed a service without which rapid development would not have been possible. They moved into difficult country lacking roads and reeking with malaria, taught the farmers how they could be richer by planting commercial crops for sale, and arranged the collection and transportation of ever growing quantities of produce. Of course they did not do this for love: who works for love? But it is beyond question that they raised the economic level of the peasants as well as themselves by what they did.

This is how Africa and South-east Asia came to develop into three-storied societies: with the whites at the top, the natives at the bottom and an intermediate group of Indians, Chinese, Arabs or Ibos who dominated trade and the skilled artisan jobs.

Why are these intermediate groups so successful? Mainly because their culture is different from that of farmers in subsistence societies. They are willing to work 18 hours a day for six days a week. They understand the

importance of saving and reinvesting, instead of spending all one's earnings on conspicuous prestige consumption. They know that to stay in business you must please your customers, and you must pay your creditors on the due date. In addition they have the virtues one finds in any immigrant group. Usually it is the most enterprising people who emigrate. Immigrants know that their success depends on their own efforts, and therefore they live by higher standards of effort and personal responsibility than people who are living in their own country.

It follows also that such groups are clannish. When they have a job they hire one of their own, because they know from bitter experience that the natives among whom they live do not live by the code which success in business requires. They support each other, and usually have extensive programmes of care for their sick or handicapped, because it is important to maintain the image of their group as competent and self-reliant, both in their own eyes and in the eyes of the people amongst whom they live.

I keep mentioning the Ibos to remind you that this is not a racial phenomenon. An amazing amount of nonsense is talked about race. British Guyana is a country where three years ago only the British army prevented the Indians and the Negroes from killing each other off. The other day a university Professor said to me: "The nasty thing about Indians is that they save so much — saving is in their blood". He was extremely surprised when I told him that on the contrary India has nearly the lowest rate of saving in the world. It is not race that gives Indians or Chinese or Arabs or Ibos their superior accomplishment when they live in subsistence societies. The difference is wholly in the culture of immigration.

Whatever the cause, the result in the second half of the twentieth century is explosive. As the indigenous populations have tried to enter business they have found themselves largely unable to compete, because they do not understand what business takes. The method of learning, which would be to apprentice their sons in other people's businesses, is closed to them, since the intermediate group hires only its own members. So antagonisms have got fiercer and fiercer until they have erupted in violent and disgusting outbursts.

The story began in Burma, where shortly after independence all the Indians were driven out, being forced to leave most of their belongings behind. Then the position of the Chinese in Thailand and in Indonesia began to be threatened; a massacre of these people one of these days is not yet out of the question. Here in our continent the Northerners killed 20,000



Ibos in September 1966 and drove out a million from their homes. The Indians in East Africa are clearly doomed, the only question being how many will be killed before they are all driven out. Genocide is the favourite crime of our century, what with Turks and Armenians, Germans and Jews, Russians and Ukrainians, Hindus and Moslems, Arabs and Jews — it is a melancholy tale.

Any decent country is bound to wish to avoid such happenings within its borders. The solution is clear, in principle. Different races cannot live at peace within the same borders unless there is absolute economic equality between them. Racial differences bring enough trouble without their being identified also with economic conflicts. Hence the solution, if the races are to live together, is that very special measures must be taken to raise up the lower group, even if this means making available to them special programmes, resources and institutions which are not also available to the higher group.

For examples we can go quite far back in British history. In the year 1484, when large numbers of silk weavers were flooding England from France, they were welcomed by Richard III because they were bringing in a new industry. But in order to prevent them from developing into a separate clan, and in order to force them to teach their trade to English youngsters, he passed an Act forbidding a foreigner to take any other foreigner as an apprentice except his son. Henry VIII faced a similar and equally welcome influx of Protestant refugees from Holland some 40 years later. He strengthened the Act in 1523 by forbidding aliens to have any alien apprentices at all. The new skills were therefore acquired by Englishmen within a generation. This is what the Northerners should have done to the Ibos instead of murdering them. A law prohibiting non-Northerners from employing other non-Northerners, coupled with a massive educational programme for Northerners, would have solved the problem within a generation.

I have already argued in an earlier lecture that the chief condition for creating a large indigenous class of competent business people is to flood the market with secondary schoolboys some of whom are then forced into business. Many African governments, without doing this, have tried to proceed by creating special funds to help African businessmen. Most of these programmes have ended in disappointment, since most of the money has gone down the drain. Money is no substitute for knowledge and experience, which is what the small businessman chiefly lacks. So some

governments now tie their loans to supervision. Before the loan is granted the business is examined thoroughly to find out what its real problems are, and the loan is made conditional on the borrower following the advice of the loaning agency. This is expensive, since it takes a lot of time to study a business thoroughly, and the kind of consultants competent to do this are both scarce and very expensive. Supervised credit of this kind is worth while despite its expense, since small business is the school for larger business. But until there is an adequate flow of secondary educated people into business, the emergence of a competent indigenous managerial class must be rather slow.

It must also be recognised that the best teacher is experience. Africans should therefore be encouraged to go into business in as large numbers as possible, so that as many as possible get a chance to acquire the skills of successful management. The consequences of this offend some tidy minds, for the mortality of small business is high. Even in the United States, where businessmen are better educated, half the small businesses go bankrupt within twelve months of opening. To the tidy mind it seems a waste of both manpower and capital to have so many small men open up in lorry transport, or timber, or soft drinks, or printing or the other small-scale operations into which small businessmen flock. The tidy mind wishes to reduce this waste by a system of licensing, which would keep the numbers in each trade down to the level he considers adequate. This is a mistake if one looks on small business as the school which is going to produce men with experience for bigger things. If one has a school where half the pupils fail the examinations one does not say: this is a waste of time and money; henceforth we will take only half as many pupils on a first come first served basis. One tries rather to improve the quality of the school — in this case by means of a small business improvement agency which offers advice, coupled sometimes with finance.

### Capital

Let me now turn to money, which for most countries has proved more difficult than personnel. Most countries do not mind using temporarily the services of foreign personnel, business or otherwise, so the only crippling deficiency of enterprise in most countries has been in agriculture. Money is a more nearly universal constraint.

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

We can put a figure on the financial need. A community needs to spend some 10 to 12 per cent of its income on public services, excluding defence, but including education, health, roads and general administration. On top of this some 18 to 20 per cent of national income must be invested or reinvested in new capital, in the private and public sectors. So in round numbers 30 per cent of national income is needed for public services and capital formation; private consumption must not exceed 70 per cent of the national income. Instead, typical figures for underdeveloped countries are between 75 and 80 per cent.

If private consumption exceeds 70 per cent, a country cannot provide all the resources it needs for its growth, and becomes dependent on outside capital. In politics the hallmark of independence is membership of the United Nations. In economics independence means that you do not need capital from outside. There is no formula for achieving economic independence other than to keep private consumption down to 70 per cent of national income or less.

The other 30 per cent is divided between private saving and taxation. It follows that the necessary tax level depends to some extent on how much private saving there is. In developed countries gross private saving is 15 to 20 per cent of national income, but in underdeveloped countries the range of private saving is only 10 to 15 per cent. This deficiency of private saving has to be made up by public saving if you cannot rely on foreign aid and investment. By public saving is meant the difference between the government's revenues and its expenditure on current account, in other words, a budget surplus. Given the low level of private saving, a self-sufficient underdeveloped country would need to have its government save anywhere from 5 to 10 per cent of the national income. Typical ratios of public saving in underdeveloped countries are not 5 to 10 but only 2 to 3 per cent.

Most of the talk about economic independence, neo-colonialism and the disadvantages of foreign aid ignores these simple facts. If an African or Asian country is to grow adequately without foreign aid, its government must raise about 20 per cent of the national income in taxes and other revenues, out of which it must save 8 per cent of national income, keeping its current expenditures restricted to about 60 per cent of its revenues. No African government comes anywhere near these targets.

This explains also why the World Bank and other agencies which assess the economic policies of countries asking for assistance attach so much

importance to the size of the budget surplus. The budget surplus is the money available to the government from its own resources to carry out the Development Plan, to build the roads, hospitals, factories, mines or whatever it has set its heart on. If a country is increasing the budget surplus year by year, it is getting nearer and nearer to economic independence. But if it is not increasing the budget surplus none of its talk can be taken seriously.

Now it is by no means easy to have a bigger and bigger budget surplus every year. Government recurrent expenditure inevitably increases rapidly in underdeveloped countries. There is a tremendous deficiency to be made up in roads, schools, and public health, and every government is pressured into trying to make good in five years the deficiencies of the previous 5,000 years. Obviously there is no way out of this but to exercise restraint, and if it is not possible politically to exercise restraint, then the country cannot save enough, and must either depend on more foreign capital or reduce the rate of growth. One cannot get a quart out of a pint pot.

The expenditures of underdeveloped countries have grown faster in recent years than was absolutely necessary. Let me pass over the obvious wastes such as innumerable foreign embassies, and take some of the more widespread pitfalls.

First, some governments have taken a long time to realise that capital expenditure entails recurrent liabilities. You may be able to get a lot of money to spend on buildings, by loans or gifts from America or Russia or China, but every school you build adds teachers to the recurrent budget, every hospital adds nurses and so on. The sharp rise in foreign aid on capital account during the fifties, which I mentioned in my first lecture, did not carry with it willingness to finance with foreign grants the recurrent expenditure which would result from capital expenditure. Governments thought it clever to design as large capital expenditure programmes as they could, and were rather surprised when their recurrent budgets then leaped up beyond control. The moral is that the fundamental constraint in making a development plan is not how much money you can raise for the capital programme, but how large a recurrent budget you are going to be able to finance thereafter. Many governments are now in difficulties because capital came too easily in the early sixties.

A second pitfall has been a natural tendency to cope with the growing unemployment problem by padding the public payroll, swelling the civil service, employing twice as many people in public enterprises as are needed, or creating special job crops which produce much less than they cost.

Unemployment relief is both desirable and feasible where the number of unemployed is limited. Whereas in West Africa, the potential number of unemployed is unlimited, since the more relief you offer in the towns the greater the number of people who will drift into the towns—in such circumstances unemployment relief is an open road to bankruptcy. As I argued yesterday the only fundamental way to end unemployment is to redress the present imbalance between rural and urban incomes. Any money the government spends on able-bodied people should be matched by work producing output of equal value.

A third pitfall is the tendency to run state enterprises at a loss, so that they become a drain on the budget. This owes something to the old socialist idea that profit is a form of exploitation. Once one recognises that profit is a major source of saving, it becomes highly desirable that public enterprises make profits which can be used to finance new capital formation. The result of the alternative policy, where public enterprises make no profits, is that every extension of the public sector relatively to the private reduces the economy's propensity to save. This is clearly one reason why the British propensity to save is lower now than it was sixty years ago.

Another reason why governments tend to run state enterprises at a loss is the premature adoption of the welfare principle that public services should be available to all free of charge; not just education and roads, but also hospitals, water and electricity, with transportation also free or heavily subsidised. Making services free leads to unlimited demands by the public beyond the capacity of governments to meet at this stage. Unlimited demands are an excellent strategy for a nationalist struggle designed to embarrass the central government, but they have no place in a self-governing society.

The only way to avoid unlimited demands is to make clear to every village that it can have anything that it is willing to pay for. This does not involve decentralising control of operations to local authorities; it involves only decentralising financial decision. The question whether a service should be operated by the central government, the county government, the municipality or the rural authority is quite separate from the question who should pay for it. Whether the government or the municipality should run the service is mainly determined by the economies of scale. What I am arguing for is decentralisation of finance; the cost of building or operating a service in any locality being charged to those who live there and benefit from it.

Decentralisation of finance is the only way to solve the financial problem, which is essentially how to get the people to agree to pay more taxes. People in outlying regions do not like paying more taxes unless they see just what they are going to get for the money. They are already well accustomed to the farmers being taxed to beautify the towns at the expense of the countryside. They may agree to pay more taxes to a local authority if these taxes are earmarked to provide electricity, or water, or a farm-to-market road, but if the taxes are to go to the central government for unspecified purposes not directly related to regional needs, one must expect resistance.

Another factor which makes decentralisation of finance inevitable is the increasing need to rely on direct personal taxes. It is relatively easy to get people to pay indirect taxes, which are simply added to the prices of what they buy. To get the taxpayer to go directly to the tax office and pay out cash arouses much greater antagonism. But the share of direct taxes rises with development. Underdeveloped countries raise about as much in indirect taxes on commodities as developed countries — whether in import or excise duties. The big difference between the two groups of countries is the much greater reliance of the developed on income taxes and property taxes paid directly by the taxpayer. It is very difficult for a central government in whom people have no confidence to get people to come into the tax office to pay direct taxes for unspecified purposes. It is much easier for local authorities to raise such taxes by tying them to local services which the people themselves want.

The ruling political parties in Africa do not support decentralisation of finance and the building up of local units of government, because every central government wants to keep power in its hands. Yet it is obvious to anyone looking at Africa from the outside that African government is excessively centralised. This is a hangover from the colonial regimes. When those regimes were established government was confined to keeping law and order. As the modern functions of government were added, the imperial power added them to itself rather than to the local units of government. So public services which in England or America were being run by local authorities — schools, water, electricity, local roads, hospitals — were all taken over by the central governments and financed from central revenues. This worked when the central government was providing so little service that tax revenues of five to ten per cent of national income were enough. These could be raised by indirect taxes. Now that Africa is

aiming at tax revenues of twenty per cent of national income, there will have to be greater reliance on direct taxes, and this will not work unless the taxpayer is brought nearer to deciding what service he will get for his money. This means building up the local units of government.

But let us have no illusions about the speed with which adjustments can be made. However expertly one may reform the fiscal structure, it is not politically feasible to increase sharply the share of taxation in the national income over a short period of time. Except in wartime, attempts to do this have always ended in strikes and riots, even in one-party states. Only a police state can take an extra one per cent of national income every year. If one wishes to raise the tax rate from fifteen to twenty per cent, this is normally something to do gradually over ten to fifteen years. Indeed this is the crux of the argument for foreign aid. Any country can afford to tax itself twenty per cent and save eight per cent, but if it is to get there from a much lower level one must give it time. Equally those who give aid are entitled to ask whether the recipients are using the opportunity of foreign aid to increase steadily the share of taxes and savings in national income. The answer, unfortunately, is that very few underdeveloped nations have met this test. In spite of unprecedentedly high rates of growth of income, not more than a dozen countries can show a substantial increase in savings ratios during the past decade. The chief aim of development planners over the next decade must be to restrain consumption relatively to output, so that their countries may achieve economic independence as well as economic growth.

#### 4. *Socialism in Africa*



The word socialism is now used in so many different senses that one cannot make progress in discussion without indicating precisely what one is talking about.

I shall therefore divide my lecture into three parts. In the first part I shall classify the various ideas which the word socialism has been used to cover. In the second part I shall try to isolate modern trends in socialist thought especially in Western Europe. And finally I shall consider the prospects of socialism in Africa.

To begin with definitions, we must note that the word socialism has been used to cover three distinct sets of ideas. The first set relates to the degree of equality in the distribution of income. The second set of ideas relates to the ownership of property. And the third set relates to the powers of the state.

Take first the distribution of income. A beginner in the subject might believe that socialism requires everybody to have the same income, but this is not so. According to Karl Marx, in the pure communist state the principle of distribution will be "from each according to his ability, to each according to his need"; this implies no equality. Lenin believed in absolute equality, and tried to impose it immediately after the Revolution. Stalin, on the other hand, had people shot for saying that socialism implied equality of earnings. His principle was "to each according to his work", and he deliberately created an economy where earnings from work varied more widely than in Western Europe or North America. When the three fathers of Russian socialism differ so completely on equality of income, the confusion of lesser socialists can be excused.

The principle "to each according to his need" is the basis not of socialism but of communism, using this word in its original sense rather than its current political sense. There have been many small experimental communities where people live together without recognising individual property or income, and share everything — food, clothes and even children, though not necessarily wives. The Bible says that some early Christians were like this; there have been many American communities; and the system is popular in the kibbutzes of modern Israel. This is the principle which operates within the family — to each according to his need. People who embrace this communist principle want more or less to abolish the family as the primary social unit; they want the whole of society to be the primary social unit. Most socialists accept the family as the primary social unit, and therefore reject the communist principle. So in the socialist

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

context the argument centres on whether you favour equality of reward, or equality of opportunity.

The egalitarian tradition goes back much earlier than modern socialism, and should really be described as radical rather than socialist, even though most modern socialists have adopted it. If one is concerned with incentives for effort, as any serious thinker must be, the emphasis naturally rests on equality of opportunity rather than equality of reward. The latter survives only in the form of a concern to eliminate extremes from both ends of the income scale. Equality of opportunity centres these days on trying to ensure that every young person shall have equal access to the fullest education from which he can benefit, and thereafter equal access to every job irrespective of tribe, class, race, or religion. If incomes were based only on opportunity the result would be poverty for the handicapped and the unlucky, and riches for the talented or the lucky. Here the sentiment for equality of income comes in to cut off both ends. The foundations were not laid by socialists. The welfare state, which is intended to banish poverty, was invented by Bismarck, who was a conservative. The progressive income tax and the death duties, which are to eliminate riches were pushed most in England by Lloyd George, who was a Liberal. Egalitarianism is really a pre-socialist idea, though nowadays everybody who believes in egalitarianism is liable to be called a socialist.

Joseph Stalin would not have been embarrassed by your pointing out that his doctrine, "to each according to his work" involved great inequality of income. He would have answered that socialism takes no position on income from work; that the essence of socialism is that there should be no income from private property. Let me qualify that word "no". Socialists have nothing against a man owning property for his own use, whether a toothbrush or a house or a machine or a farm. The socialist objection is against somebody using property to hire others and make a profit out of their labour. The emphasis here is on profit. Socialists do not object to your hiring a housekeeper, or hiring a tailor to make you a suit of clothes. They object only to your making a profit by selling goods or services made by persons whom you have hired. To make a profit out of hired labour is the Marxist definition of exploitation.

We are now in the second department of the definitions of socialism, the first having dealt with egalitarianism, and the second now dealing with property. A beginner would assume that socialism implies that all property used in production must be owned by the government. Stalin thought so,

but if the socialist test is that you must not make a profit out of other people's work, this test can be met by many systems of organisation besides government ownership. The earliest socialists wanted to divide up the land and give each farmer an equal portion; that there is nothing unsocialist about a farmer working his own land without employees is now accepted by Stalin's successors in communist Eastern Europe. In fact, Stalin liquidated the farmers not because he thought private farming was immoral, but because the only way to tax them heavily to pay for his rapid industrialisation was to herd them into collective farms. It is also not unsocialist for farmers to work cooperatively; nothing in socialism requires that only the government may own commercial property. In fact, the Yugoslav "communists" handed the factories over to the workers to run as cooperatives, and this is also what Lenin had done immediately after the Russian Revolution. The cooperative principle is an older socialist tradition than government ownership, and meets equally the Marxist test that nobody is making a profit out of hiring somebody else.

The Marxist emphasis on profit came from the Ricardian socialists, a group of men who used Ricardo's theory of value to construct a socialist case. According to Ricardo, wages could never rise above the minimum level required for subsistence. So, as productivity increased all the surplus was taken by landlords and capitalists. This was clearly unfair, and so the socialist case was made to hang on the exploitation involved in making profits. With the passage of time Ricardo's theory of value was challenged by the facts: wages did rise substantially above the subsistence level, not only in Britain, where the trade unions promptly claimed the credit, but even more so in the United States of America, where the trade unions had negligible influence. The economists who came after Ricardo began to argue that wealth was due not to labour alone, but to the combination of land, capital, labour and management, and that natural forces rewarded each of these according to its contribution to the product. From this analysis it followed that profit was not exploitation, but was rather the reward for the contribution of capital and of management.

Modern socialists accept that profit is justifiable insofar as it is a reward for management, and even the Soviet Union is now increasingly rewarding its managers by giving them a share of the profits of their enterprises. Profit is no longer a dirty word. No socialist in Western Europe bothers anymore about the profits made by small businessmen or farmers.

But only a part of profit is the reward for management: the rest is the

reward for the contribution of capital, and this part still sticks in the socialist throat.

Now capital results from saving, an act which is generally regarded as praiseworthy. Nobody objects to people earning interest on what they have personally saved out of their income. In the Soviet Union, for instance, you are encouraged to buy government bonds, and are paid interest on your savings. The heart of the socialist case has always been an objection not to capital which people acquire out of their own savings, but rather to the inheritance of large blocks of land and capital. So, for socialists in Western Europe, in the first half of the twentieth century, death duties and inheritance taxes became the principal socialist weapon.

There is therefore no single socialist attitude to property. Some communists, but by no means all, believe that only the government should own property. An older tradition favours cooperative ownership by the workers, as in Yugoslavia. A still older tradition favours dividing all property up equally: this is the essence of agrarian socialism. And yet another tradition does not mind a man owning property he has worked for, and objects only to his children inheriting it when he dies. The strict identification of socialism with government ownership of property is not justified by the history of socialism.

One of the reasons why socialists have shied away from identifying socialism with government ownership of property is that they think this gives the government too much power. This brings me to the third aspect of the definition of socialism, namely, the role accorded to the state.

The beginner would suppose that socialism is identified with increasing the powers of the state, but to confound him one need only remind him that Communism's declared goal is, on the contrary, the "withering away of the state". This confusion stems from the rift which has always run through radical thought. One set of socialists is heir to the liberal tradition, with its concern to protect the individual against the state, and to surround the government with laws, checks and balances to minimise corruption, inefficiency and tyranny. This set of socialists leans towards a society of cooperatives, death duties and small businessmen, and even when it nationalises property hands this over not to a government department but to a public corporation which it tries to shield as much as possible from government interference. The other set of socialists has its tradition in the thought that society is bigger than the individual, that the government represents society, that the individual must therefore be subordinated by the

government to the larger purposes of society. Some of the earlier socialist writing admires the ordered activity of the ants, the bees and the Spartans. We now call this tradition totalitarian or fascist. Liberal socialists were annoyed that both Hitler and Mussolini called themselves socialists, but the annoyance was not justified since both liberalism and fascism have always been part of the radical scene.

The liberal and the fascist wings of socialism fraternised until Lenin broke them apart. Lenin was a totalitarian, and insisted that his brand of socialism must be totalitarian. He also insisted that his sympathisers in the rest of the world form themselves into a distinct organisation, to be known as the Communist Party, which would segregate itself from all other socialist groups. He failed to capture the socialists of Western Europe, most of whom repudiated the Communist Party and affirmed their allegiance to the liberal tradition. Communists claim that their socialism is the only true socialism, just as each church believes itself to be the only true church, but in free societies communists have always been a minority in the socialist movement.

For a time these two groups, the communists and the liberal socialists disagreed not only on civil liberties but also on centralised planning, in which the government decides what is to be produced and sends every business manager his instructions. The communists asserted that this was the way to ensure rapid growth, and for a time they carried conviction. But the pendulum is now swinging the other way, and even communists are moving away from centralised planning. The current consensus is that rapid growth derives not from centralised planning but from investing a large proportion of the national income in human and physical resources, which one can do in any kind of economic system (see chapter 3).

Now let us bring together the different parts of our definition of socialism. We have seen how many different kinds of opinions self-styled socialists hold about the proper degree of egalitarianism, about the different forms of property, and about the role of the state. In the light of these differences, it is not difficult to understand why there are so many different kinds of socialists. If you take just three possibilities from each of our three divisions, this gives you twenty-seven different kinds of socialists and since there are more than three possibilities in each division, the actual number of different kinds of socialists runs into several dozen. Add that all socialists share a sense of moral superiority over all non-socialists, because the true socialist always strives to put the public interest first. Men who

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

are convinced of their superior morality are usually contemptuous of those who disagree with them, and most contemptuous of those who they think should know better. This is why socialists are so quarrelsome and hate each other so much. When the communists come to power they kill the socialists first, then look for the capitalists, who in the meantime have run away. The quarrelsomeness of the socialists is also their great source of weakness. They nearly let themselves be wiped out in Western Europe during the 1930's rather than unite to defeat their enemies.

### Developments Since the War

The situation has improved since the second world war, partly because some of the socialists have learnt their lesson, but mainly for other reasons.

One important reason is that socialists have discovered economic growth. Most of the traditional socialist writing is concerned only with how to split up the pie. It takes for granted that production will take place and grow whatever kind of socialist arrangements you may make for distribution. When socialist parties came into power, and found themselves faced with economic crises for which they had no remedy, the assumption that production would look after itself had to be dropped. A new test was introduced which socialist prescriptions had to meet, namely, are they consistent with rapid growth. For example, no modern socialist believes in equality of income, because this is clearly inconsistent with initiative. No modern socialist believes that profit is immoral, since efficiency clearly benefits from profit sharing arrangements, both for workers and for management. No modern socialist believes that the workers should get all they produce, since this is clearly inconsistent with saving and growth; in fact modern socialism will almost certainly take most of the power away from trade unions. No modern socialist believes in centralised planning, because, while it is easy to plan a stagnant society, like that of the bees or the ants or the Spartans, where everybody does today what he did yesterday, it is impossible to plan from the centre an economy which is growing swiftly in unforeseeable directions. What I am saying is that when one adds the constraint that one's proposals must be consistent with rapid economic growth, the number of socialist options is very greatly reduced.

Another casualty of our times is something called scientific socialism which I have not yet mentioned. Scientific socialism is not a theory of how

society should be organised, but a theory of history. Karl Marx claimed that an understanding of the relationship between different social classes enabled one to predict the future. Unfortunately all his predictions proved to be wrong. He predicted that the poor would get poorer and more numerous, and the rich richer, creating a huge empty gap in the middle; this is called "the polarisation of society". Instead, the most remarkable development of the last hundred years has been the rise of the middle class, both in numbers and in status, so that nowadays nearly everybody pretends to be just middle class, from the messenger to the Queen of England. Marx predicted that as the capitalist system aged, revolution would break out. Instead we now see that as capitalism ages the workers get *less* revolutionary. Communist revolutions occur only in backward pre-capitalist societies. Marx predicted that ultimately the workers would take over the state. In fact what has happened in every modern society, whether communist or capitalist, is that power has been seized by a new managerial class, which has reduced both the property owners and the trade unionists to relative insignificance. Nobody takes Marxism seriously as a science for predicting the future any more. The rulers of communist countries abandoned Marxism a long time ago, and even in western countries, where communist theoreticians are not under the same pressure to come to terms with reality, it is now hard to find a communist who has studied Marx seriously. What is left of Marxism is that it is no longer possible to study history without taking account of the factors which Marx stressed — of the economic factor in general, and of the relations between social classes in particular. He is entitled to have his name on the list of those who have altered our ways of thinking, like Newton or Darwin or Keynes. But it makes no more sense to ask a social scientist whether he is a Marxist than it would make to ask a physicist whether he was a Newtonian.

If, then, socialism has lost so many of its frills when brought face to face with the realities of economic development, what is now left that distinguishes socialists from other men?

Mr. Nyerere, the President of Tanzania, begins his pamphlet on socialism (*Ujamaa*) by saying that socialism is an attitude and not a set of institutions. That he can say this, and meet with wide approval, is itself a sign of changing times. The early socialists wrote to set out a blueprint of how society should be run. Socialists no longer emphasize blueprints because so many of their blueprints have had to be abandoned.

Well, what is the socialist attitude? On egalitarianism it is not to be

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

distinguished from that of other radicals who do not call themselves socialist: equality of opportunity, opposition to inheritance of large fortunes, social security, abolition of poverty, heavily progressive taxation. Nearly everybody who calls himself left of centre now supports this kind of programme.

There is similar consensus on the political powers of the state. The liberal wing of socialism is winning out not only in Western Europe, but in the communist countries, too, where more and more the people are demanding release from their totalitarian burden. There is now only one continent whose political leaders insist that society is greater than the individual and write books and pamphlets in praise of totalitarianism. That continent, alas, is Africa, swimming against the tide. But I will speak about this aspect of our problem tomorrow.

In a moment I shall come to the socialist attitude to property. Let us pause to note that the socialist attitude to egalitarianism and to the powers of the state is now hardly distinguishable from that of other men who would call themselves liberals, or left of centre. The socialist position is, however, sharply distinguishable from that of conservatives by its attitude to private wealth. The world is full of people who still believe it desirable for a man to be able to make a fortune, and found a family to which he bequeaths his riches. This appeals to the very large number of people who would like to do it themselves. But it also appeals to some on other grounds. Some believe it to be a good incentive to effort and initiative (I say "good" since the experience of Eastern Europe demonstrates clearly that it is not a "necessary" incentive). Others believe that democracy depends on having some rich men who are strong enough to resist an ill-intentioned government. Still others think that society needs rich men to support freedom of innovation in the arts, academic freedom, and generally speaking opinions running counter to mass trends. If we define the true left as consisting only of those who are opposed to a society in which some men can become rich and "found a family", then the true left is a minority in Western Europe, even today. It is simply not true that "we are all socialists now"; what is true is only that the great majority of people in Western Europe favour governmental measures to abolish poverty, by taxing the rich to help the poor. The majority still admire, envy, cringe before, or excuse the man who makes a million, or inherits a million; whereas socialists abhor the creation and even more the inheritance of private fortunes.



When we come to the socialists' positive proposals for property the situation is not so clear. Here the movement is still sharply divided between those who want more nationalisation and those who do not.

Both sides are disillusioned with the nationalisation which has taken place. It has not solved the labour problem, since, if workers think they are exploited, they are just as hostile to the government as to the private employer. To solve the labour problem you must either hand the factories over to the workers like Tito, or abolish trade union power, like Stalin. Neither does nationalisation change the inequality of wealth, since the owners are paid full compensation, and are therefore as rich after nationalisation as they were before. You could alter inequality only by taking the property away without paying for it. This you can do if you nationalise everything without warning on the same day, but if you have a programme of gradual nationalisation over many years, nobody would invest in firms marked for expropriation, and the economy would run down. In Britain nobody likes the public corporations which run nationalised industries. The consumer dislikes them because they are vast monopolies which can ignore his complaints. And Parliament dislikes them because they spend millions of money outside Parliamentary control. French nationalised industries are subject to Ministerial control, but the British take it for granted that it would be fatal to let politicians get their hands on an important asset like a nationalised industry.

Those who, in spite of these disillusionments, want to nationalise even more industries think that they can get round these difficulties somehow, but their arguments usually turn on finding a better breed of men to run the industries.

Mr. Gaitskell, who was the leader of the Labour Party in the 1950's, had a different solution. He started from the fact that, in an economy which is growing by three per cent per annum, the amount of man-made capital doubles in about twenty-five years and quadruples in about fifty years. If all new capital were public capital, the private man-made capital that England now has would in fifty years be reduced from about sixty to only about fifteen per cent of the whole. Therefore even if all the existing private capital remained in private hands, within fifty years private capital would be a negligible part of the whole. Why then make an enormous fuss to get hold of existing private capital, when by concentrating on making new capital public, one could soon reduce private capital to insignificance?

The second stage of the argument starts from the fact that new capital

comes out of new saving. Hence the way to have public capital instead of private capital is to have public saving instead of private saving. Make taxation so heavy that private saving falls and public saving increases.

What to do with all this public saving? Here you can choose. The government could use the money to build public factories. Or if you are doubtful about the efficient management of public factories, the government could buy shares in privately managed factories. To the management of a large corporation it makes little difference who owns the shares. Under the Gaitskell plan public ownership of the corporation could be combined with private management.

Here we have another example of socialist thought adapting itself to modern developments. The separation between management and ownership is one of the striking features of the large modern corporation. One does not any longer have to choose between private management of private property and public management of public property. One can also have public management of private property. This, in one sense, is what nationalisation comes to; the assets belong to the public in the legal sense, but they are matched by an equal amount of private wealth, since the original assets are acquired by paying compensation, and new assets are financed by borrowing from the private sector. The fourth alternative, private management of public property, meets the socialist requirement that it brakes the growth of private wealth, and ensures at the same time such virtues as private management may have in an economy like Britain, which depends on being highly competitive with other countries in new commodities and new technologies.

A proposal to marry private management with public saving takes a lot of thinking about, when you first hear of it, and raises a lot of questions. Mr. Gaitskell was assailed on all sides. His party did not understand what he was driving at, and was annoyed with him for producing an alternative to nationalisation. The Conservative Party, on the other hand, understood at once that public saving would be a more deadly blow for socialism than any set of nationalisation schemes, which would merely buy out the owners and leave them as rich as they were before. Mr. Gaitskell died just as he was beginning to make his case. But I have no doubt that some new socialist leader will take it up sooner or later, since the substitution of public for private saving is the only way to meet the socialist desire for an end to the growth of private fortunes.

**African Socialism**

Now let us turn to Africa. Two questions are currently fashionable. One, is it true that Africa's traditional institutions were essentially socialist? Two, can Africa in the course of its evolution into the modern world produce a distinctly African socialism?

The first question is easy to answer, though not with a Yes or No. Take our three aspects of socialism.

First, was Africa egalitarian? In some places, yes, in others no. In traditional societies the degree of equality is a function of the scarcity or abundance of land relatively to population. Where there is so much land that everybody can have as much as he wants, or if oppressed can easily run away, such societies are always egalitarian. Great inequality belongs to areas where there is population pressure. Then one gets high rents, slavery, and aristocratic systems. Africa had both egalitarianism in some parts and slavery and aristocracy in others.

Mr. Nyerere claims that Africa was essentially socialist because the family system looked after everybody and saw that nobody starved; he takes pride in arguing that the tribe was a welfare state. Whether it is appropriate to identify the welfare state with socialism is questionable, since the welfare state was invented by Bismarck, and functions quite happily in capitalist societies; one is not a socialist merely because one opposes poverty. In any case, the tribal welfare state is not specifically African. It is found in most groups anywhere in the world who live on the fringe of subsistence. It is just a part of a universal culture of poverty. It has not in other countries survived the changes which have brought wealth within the grasp of aggressive individuals, and it has no better chance of survival in Africa, where rampant individualism is already breaking down its characteristic features.

Pass to division two: the African's attitude to property. Typically the land was regarded as belonging to the whole tribe, and therefore could not be sold. But in most areas a family would acquire the exclusive right to use certain lands, and could do what it liked with them except sell them. If you define the right of property as essentially the right to prevent others from using, then this was a system of private property. The prohibition of sale worked all right where there was so much land to be had that nobody wanted to buy land anyway. As soon as land became valuable, the prohibition was a nuisance to those who had the right of use, and they began to

evade it. Here again the African experience is no different from that of other parts of the world. African writers are very prone to attribute to race or negritude phenomena which are common to subsistence economies all over the world.

Division three: the attitude to the state. Were African tribes democratic or authoritarian? Here you can take your pick, since Africa has had all sorts, from powerful and tyrannical empires, to groups where people destooled their chief whenever they began to get bored with him.

However, since democracy has not been popular in recent African writing, the emphasis tends to be put on the collectivist tradition. We are reminded that the African regarded the tribe, including both its past and its future members, as more important than the individual. The welfare state attitude to all members of the tribe, and the vesting of land ownership in the tribe itself are added to emphasise that the African tradition is to elevate society above the individual.

This again is not a specifically African tradition; neither, as I have already pointed out, is it specifically socialist. Every tyrant from Pharaoh to Hitler has sanctified his actions with the philosophy that the state is more important than the individual. It is the liberal philosophy that is relatively recent. And people who called themselves socialists have always been found on both sides.

In any case, there is no clear road from African tribalism to socialism. Tribal sentiments bind members of the tribe to each other against non-members of the tribe. Where one is trying to make a nation out of members of different tribes who are traditionally hostile to each other, tribalism stands in the way. It stands in the way politically, because it makes it difficult to create support for national leadership. It stands in the way of equality of opportunity, when jobs are being allocated. And it stands in the way of commerce, since traders are apparently more honest in dealing with members of their own tribe than in dealing with members of other tribes. The close bonds between members of the same tribe are more of an obstacle than an asset to modern socialism.

The African socialists assert that Africans will take to socialism like ducks to water because the tribal culture emphasises recognition of social obligations. The evidence is against them. First, the evidence of history, which shows that similar attitudes in the rest of the world have been no barrier to the development of capitalism, which ruthlessly destroys all cultural patterns that lie in its way, relying on the simple fact that love of

money, and of the power and prestige which go with money, motivates men powerfully everywhere. Besides the evidence of history there is also the evidence of what is going on in Africa today. If anything, African cultures have stood up to capitalist tendencies less well than Asian cultures; they have eroded even more rapidly. The changes are all in the non-socialist direction. Individualism is rampant. Everybody seems to be trying to grab as much as he can for himself. The welfare system has broken down. A town like Lagos swarms with beggars, blind, maimed, unemployed or otherwise destitute, and hardly anybody seems to care. Africans show no greater tendency to resist the evils of early capitalism than any earlier industrialisers have shown.

If there is nothing in Africa's traditions to take her distinctively towards socialism, may she not nevertheless evolve in the future some new kind of socialism particularly appropriate to her special problems? I have been reading the so-called African socialists to see what special blueprints they offer for the future. I find none. They mostly write about the past, explaining why they wish to apply the word "socialist" to Africa's traditional institutions. When they look to the future one begins to suspect that they use the qualifying phrase "African socialist" to emphasise that they are African rather than socialist. In most cases it turns out that they are anxious not to be committed to that part of socialist doctrine which demands the public ownership and operation of business enterprise.

It is easy to understand why. The record of public enterprise in West Africa is miserable, distinguished for the most part by inefficiency, corruption, nepotism and heavy losses. "If this is socialism", many Africans say, "Heaven spare us from socialism". But of course this is not socialism.

What went wrong with public enterprise in West Africa to make it turn so sour? Part of the answer is that the "public corporation" form of socialism, transported from Britain, was inappropriate. The English socialists invented the public corporation for the following reasons. They rejected the idea of handing over public property to the workers, to be operated as co-operatives, as Yugoslavia has done. They further rejected the idea of running industrial enterprises under Ministers, as government departments, like the Post Office. The English do not trust politicians; they expect them to be inefficient and, given the chance, also to be discriminatory, if not also corrupt. They thought it possible to find outside politics a dozen independent and honest men, with very high standards, who would manage a government enterprise more efficiently and honestly than any

Minister would. So they created independent public corporations.

When you come to West Africa, the boot is on the other foot. When Ministers are operating through the parliamentary machinery they are subject to established controls. A Public Services Commission controls appointments. An independent procedure is laid down for tenders. No money can be spent unless it is voted in a Parliamentary budget. The auditor checks expenditures, and so on. The public corporation is outside all these controls. It depends for its success exclusively on finding those twelve independent and honest men to run it. And this is where it breaks down. Africa is short of strong independent men who can rise above politics. Ministers choose instead twelve of their friends, and the millions of pounds of money, the thousands of jobs and the scores of contracts provide a field day for political patronage and corruption. The institution itself is inappropriate. In West Africa at this stage all public monies, appointments and contracts need to be tightly supervised by the same kinds of machinery which one applies to ordinary Parliamentary business. Giving Ministers absolute freedom to do as they please is bound to make a mess.

But even if one could solve the problem of public control, to keep public enterprises clean, one is still left with the problem of managerial efficiency, which is a weak point in Africa. Karl Marx expected socialism to be the next stage after capitalism. Both he and Lenin emphasised that the capitalist system was solving the problems of administering large enterprises both by creating systems of checks and balances and also by producing a great many people with managerial experience. Africa has so few people with modern administrative experience and so little tradition of large-scale industrial management that she is clearly not yet ready to establish a large number of big public enterprises under political management.

But this does not mean that there should not be public ownership of enterprises under private management. The distinction between ownership and management comes easily to African minds as it did to Mr. Gaitskell's mind. He emphasised that the crux of public ownership is the creation of public capital through public saving. Africa has little private saving anyway and if it is to develop rapidly must do so with public saving. Here Mr. Gaitskell's ideas are most appropriate. Some of the public money can be used to develop large-scale industrial enterprises wholly or partly owned by the government but managed for the time being by private entrepreneurs, until Africa has learnt the arts of honest and efficient public

administration free from political patronage. Side by side with these large public enterprises the small businessman could flourish, partly supported by borrowing from the government's financial institutions. Public ownership with private management is not an African idea. In the 1920's Stalin invited many foreign enterprises to come and build and manage factories for the Russian government and even last year the Russians brought in Fiat. But Africa could be the first continent to use this variant of socialism extensively. This would certainly be better than to pour a lot of money down the drain through publicly managed public corporations.

This, however, is only one aspect of socialism—its attitude towards property. As we have seen, modern socialists attach more importance to egalitarianism and democracy, and judge the quality of a society not by how much property the government owns, as in Russia but by freedom and equality of opportunity. The questions they address to their African comrades are therefore primarily not "what are you doing about property?" but "what are you doing about equality and freedom?"

Here there is ominous silence, interrupted indeed only by those African socialists who defend both inequality and the one-party state. The political question I shall leave till tomorrow, but the economic question is no longer controversial. If Africa is to call herself liberal let alone socialist, she must tackle her inequality. The gap between middle class and working class incomes is excessive. The exploitation of the farmers by the urban classes could not be defended on ethical grounds and is in any case producing massive problems. Poverty increases every day with growing unemployment, and so does the number of beggars. There is plenty of material here for socialists, radicals and liberals.

The African socialist writers would have us believe that socialism will come easily to Africa, but I see no sign of this. On the contrary, I do not see the materials with which genuine socialist parties could now be built. In Europe socialist parties were built by a coalition of trade unions and middle-class intellectuals. In Africa both these groups are on the wrong side. The underdog is the farmer, and both the trade unions and the educated classes live by sucking the farmer's blood. A truly socialist or egalitarian movement would presumably have to start in the countryside, but of all Africa's so-called socialist writers, the only leader who sees this very clearly is Mr. Nyerere of Tanzania. The prospect that genuine socialist parties will acquire power seems rather remote, though an inegalitarian totalitarianism, combined with public ownership, seems quite possible.

#### SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

Modern socialists would not call this socialism, since they put more stress on equality and freedom than they do on property.

Let me end by reminding you that this judgement is based on what I have defined earlier as the current consensus among Western socialists as to what socialism is about. Other analysts would emphasise different aspects, and Russian or Chinese commentators would say something else again. And since there are at least fifty different varieties of socialist thought, you can pay your money and take your choice.



## 5. *The Process of Transformation*

Every country converting from a poor, subsistence economy to a rapidly expanding market economy undergoes profound cultural changes—in family structure, land tenure, tribal loyalties, political institutions, religious beliefs, degree of urbanisation and almost any other cultural feature you care to mention. We all know the old saying that omelettes cannot be made without breaking eggs. The process of transformation is painful, since established expectations are frustrated. It therefore meets with resistance, and engenders conflict. On occasion it explodes even into violent revolution. Even when peaceful it is always turbulent.

Historians study the forces which assist or hinder this transformation. Following Karl Marx, they tend to see the process primarily in terms of a conflict of economic interest between social classes. They look for a social class which before the transformation monopolised economic and political power, and they expect it to be displaced by a new class, monopolising economic and political power in the new regime. Then everything is interpreted in the light of this clash, whether it be religious ideas, the emergence of political parties, changes in judicial thought, forms of musical composition, women's fashions, or what you will.

Needless to say, the original model comes from the transformation of Western Europe, with wealth and power passing from feudal landlords to industrial capitalists. Transposed to Asia or North Africa, the model has to be modified somewhat. The rich and powerful landowning classes are available for the drama, but it is not so easy to attribute what is going on in Asia to the wealth and power of a new class of industrial capitalists. So the theory of modernisation, as it is now called, attributes change more vaguely to what it calls modernising elites, who turn out usually to be products of Western style education, who take political action to change the traditional habits and structures of their countries. Since we all favour modernisation, the heroes of the story are the leading politicians who challenge the old order and displace the landowning aristocracy. To the young, especially, these heroic political figures are objects of an almost divine worship.

The use of this model by political scientists during the past dozen years to explain African politics has had ludicrous results, for the simple reason that this is not how Africa is being modernised. Land being plentiful, most of sub-Saharan Africa has had no landlords monopolising economic and social power. The African version of the play contains no parts for landowners or industrial capitalists, and even the educated elites are more off the stage than on. Any model attributing modernisation to an internal

## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

conflict of classes is simply irrelevant. This is why most of the academic writing on African politics in the last ten years has been so completely off the mark.

Modernisation first came to Africa through the missionaries, with their schools, their hospitals and their new religion. The other important agents were the traders, making their way into the interior and offering cash to those who would grow cocoa or cotton or peanuts or other commodities for which there was a world demand. These were the two most powerful forces changing Africa. The third force was new forms of transportation, first the railway and then the road. Transportation was brought by the European governments, and in the first half of the twentieth century this and the downgrading of the tribal chief were their two great contributions to change. The educated African elite grew very slowly, and had little economic or political effect on what had been happening. As for the politicians, they came in only at the end of the process, not to promote modernisation, but to reap the benefits of what had already happened. They were not men with a new economic vision, like the heroic politicians whom the new industrial class produced in Europe to overthrow the landowning aristocracy, or like the Western university graduates in Asia, who led the challenge to their own priests and landlords and princelings. By the time African politicians arrived on the scene modernisation was no longer controversial; the question was only who should reap the greatest profit from it. The current disillusionment with West African politicians, because most of them proved not to be inspired by any great idealistic vision beyond that of reaping power for themselves, is due partly to what the logicians call "the fallacy of misplaced concreteness." Far from being the great heroes and agents of the modernisation process, the politicians were merely its beneficiaries. So whereas one can get a good idea of the modernisation process in Britain or France or India or Egypt by studying the political history of those countries, the political history of West Africa, in contrast, throws virtually no light on the powerful forces which have already so drastically changed the cultural configuration of the African peoples.

To be sure, the fact that modernisation was initiated and carried through by foreigners is not without economic and political significance, but it does nothing to validate the conventional model. In East and Central Africa Europeans took the Africans' land, and forced them to work for subsistence wages on plantations and in mines by imposing taxes payable

only in cash, as well as by more violent measures. There the politicians were inspired by a terrible injustice, and it is perhaps not entirely by accident that East Africa produced politicians of far greater integrity and far less corruption than those of West Africa. Great heat burns away impurities. However my present concern is solely with West Africa.

In West Africa the chief legacy of modernisation by foreigners is the confusion of a love-hate relationship. The Europeans overwhelmed Africa more than Asia. The Indians are still Hindus or Moslems, wear their traditional dress, play their traditional music, and worship their traditional gods. They have taken from Europe science, technology and some political ideas, but not much else, and they do not feel that they have lost their identity in the process. West Africans have taken more and given up more, and tend to resent what they have lost without any corresponding gratitude for what they have gained — an attitude which results in some hostility towards their former teachers. The young are going through what is now called an identity crisis, in which for the time being they are consumed with the question what it means to be an African; a question complicated on the one hand by the heterogeneity of Africa, and on the other hand by the extent to which African cultures have already been undermined by European modes.

The experience is exciting, and though some potentially creative Africans will be sterilised by it, others will no doubt yield fruit abundantly. But it has its costs, as we can see only too well in the economic sphere. Africa cannot at present develop rapidly without foreign assistance, both capital and managerial. China and Burma apart, Asians do not hesitate to accept as much of this aid as they can attract, and Africa will only damage herself if she treats foreigners with such hostility and suspicion that they decide to pass her by. The current mood in Europe and America to wash one's hands of Africa can only be a tragedy for Africa.

So far I have been arguing a negative proposition, that the model of modernisation, originated in Western Europe and modified for Asia, throws no light on African problems. Now let me turn to the positive side and ask what the African problems really are, that distinguish them from the original European model. I wish to dwell on three of these. First, the struggle to hold down consumption. Secondly, the effort to build a nation and thirdly, administrative efficiency.

### **The Struggle for Savings**

Private consumption has to be held down, relatively to national income, so that funds can be invested in human and physical resources. As we have seen, any nation that can invest thirty per cent of the national income in public services and physical capital is going to make rapid economic progress. Now saving was no problem to nineteenth century Europe. The masses of the people were poor, but large resources were in the hands of wealthy landlords, traders and industrialists, who saved automatically as much as was needed to finance economic expansion. The new commercial and industrial classes, moreover, were Puritanical in religion and outlook. They avoided conspicuous consumption, and gave high priority to saving and investment.

Africa's situation is quite different. The two most powerful classes, the urban workers and the educated middle class, have unlimited demands for more consumption now, and save next to nothing. The nineteenth century did not have powerful trade unions which could push wages up much faster than productivity, as has been occurring continuously in Nigeria. As for the African middle classes, their ethic seems very different from that of the European middle classes. In Europe the professional man inherited all the traditions of the medieval guild, with its emphasis on high standards of craftsmanship and of responsibility to the customer for the quality of one's work. He was also steeped in the Puritan tradition. He was expected to take more pride in his work than in the money it brought him. Today these standards are breaking down all over the world. Hospital doctors go on strike for more pay and leave their patients to die. Teachers, who are supposed to instil a sense of social responsibility into their pupils, are the first to break the law and threaten violence unless they get more pay. This is the new attitude in Europe and North America, so it is not strange that the African middle classes also give the impression that they care more about money than about anything else. Instead of saving, they spend more than they earn, and live most of their lives in debt. Instead of being a restraining force, enabling the nation to hold down consumption in favour of increasing investment, they help to set the tone for rapid increases in personal consumption.

The low level of private saving in Africa, compared with Europe, throws the burden of saving on to the public treasury. If any African country is to become financially independent, its government will have to save some

five to ten per cent of national income, if only to make up for the deficiency of private saving. This can be done only by keeping taxes up and current expenditure down. To keep current expenditure down is particularly difficult in Africa at present, when there are such obvious backlogs in education, public health, transportation and welfare. The only feasible solution is to persuade the public to pay more taxes. This necessitates shifting as much of the financial burden as one can off the central budget, on to the budgets of regional and local authorities, saying to the people in effect: you can have as much of any service as you are willing to pay for yourselves, through the local organs of government which you control. As I have argued in an earlier lecture, the fiscal problem cannot be solved without decentralisation of finance, but this, for the moment, does not accord with the conventional wisdom.

All this adds up to the fact that the central economic problem in modernisation today is how to achieve a large budget surplus on current account, a problem which did not exist in nineteenth century modernisation. This is the test by which any set of allegedly modernising political leaders has to be judged. Alas, West Africans have been learning to apply the opposite test — to worship most those leaders who spend most lavishly, without bothering to ask where the money is coming from.

How can a large budget surplus be achieved? The two alternative roads are force or consensus. Neither is promising. The requisite force can be applied only in a police state. It is not enough to be a dictator. Most dictators have to keep their ears to the ground, and to go along with public opinion, otherwise they will be thrown out. A dictator cannot levy heavy taxes upon an unwilling public unless he is prepared to establish such an effective police state that he can deal severely with every cell of opposition that may form. Hitler and Stalin were able to do this, but most other dictators cannot. One is thus driven back upon consensus. Without a police state the problem can be solved only by a government able to persuade the farmers, the trade unions and the middle classes to give higher priority to saving and investment than to further increases in consumption. The members of such a government would themselves have to set the example, by living austere lives — taking low salaries, living in small houses, driving small cars, and so on. I can think of examples of this in other parts of the world. When Mr. Shastri, the Indian Prime Minister, died, his total possessions were the few rupees that were found in his pocket and he had no debts. When Mr. Manley, the Prime Minister of Jamaica, went into

politics he was a rich lawyer; when he left office twenty-five years later, he had to sell the old family home in order to provide food for himself and his wife. West Africa will solve its economic problems when it starts to produce this kind of politician, but not till then.

### **The Creation of Nation-Consciousness**

Let me turn to the second key problem which distinguishes modernisation in Africa from modernisation in Europe, namely, the effort to build a nation out of different tribes. Europe was fortunate in being able to tackle and more or less solve this problem before embarking upon its industrial revolution. Success comes more easily when you can deal with one thing at a time. Africa unfortunately is having to cope with all her difficulties simultaneously.

The tribal problem would not be so difficult if it were not also economic. If all the tribes were equally poor or equally rich they could leave each other in peace, and their rivalries would not result in domination by one of them. The hardest troubles come from the economic differences between the tribes which make the incidence of taxation unequal, and which also cause one of the tribes to get relatively more good jobs and lucrative contracts than the others.

These differences are in the first instance geographical. If your area has sixty inches of rain a year, and can grow cocoa, coffee, bananas or sugar, average income per head is going to be three times that of an area with twenty-five inches of rain, producing not much more than seven hundred-weights of millet per acre. You will then resent that taxes be levied in your area to develop the backward regions. At the same time you will insist that jobs be awarded on merit, and since your area has the most and best schools, your boys will get the best jobs, to the intense annoyance of members of the poorer tribes. The unequal distribution of minerals has a similar effect. Nigeria's tribal problems would not have got as far as civil war but for the fact that the biggest source of wealth, the oil industry, is mainly in the Eastern Region.

Besides these geographical differences, tribes differ also in their competitiveness — in their willingness to seize their opportunities for education, for business or for migration. And frequently the tribes which are most energetic in these respects are not the richest; on the contrary, it is

sparseness of natural resources, combined with a drive for achievement, which makes them so ready to invest in their own skills. Whatever the cause, the effect is that members of these tribes perform more efficiently than other tribes, and tend to be found all over the place holding some of the best jobs. They pay for their efficiency by incurring the hostility of their fellow countrymen.

These differences do not always explode into civil war. Scotland is poorer in natural resources than England. The Scots however invested more in education, and acquired a greater reputation for energy and reliability. They therefore swarmed all over England and the British Empire into a disproportionately large number of the best jobs. The English have tolerated this because the Scottish population is very small in comparison with the English. Tribalism is not much of a problem between a very large tribe and a small one. It becomes a serious political problem when large tribes are jostling each other.

I have argued in an earlier lecture that people of different races, tribes or religions cannot live together peaceably unless they are equal economically. The coincidence of economic difference with these other highly emotional factors creates unbearable tensions. It follows that if social peace is given priority, one must tax or discriminate against the better off in some way in order to help to bring up the bottom group as rapidly as is feasible. One has to face the fact that rapid adjustment may not be feasible. If one does nothing to advance the poor tribe, it may revolt. On the other hand, if one taxes the rich tribe, it may revolt too. To be successful the politician must find a middle way, which keeps the confidence of both. He must persuade the rich that they ought to yield something, and demonstrate to the poor that their needs are recognised. Here again the creation of some kind of consensus is fundamental to the solution.

The need for consensus in solving African problems, whether the economic problem or the tribal problem, is another reason why the European political model of modernisation is irrelevant. In Europe, according to Marx, the new order was to destroy the old. Power was to be taken from landowning aristocracy, who would be crushed altogether by a new industrial class, who would become all powerful. Consensus did not come into the picture; what one needed was some sort of war, bloody or otherwise.

The African problem is quite different. One does not want a political system which gives power to one group at the expense of another group. What one needs is, on the contrary, a political system which can serve as



## SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

a framework for consensus. One in which both those who wish the nation to save and those who wish it to spend can come to respect each other's point of view and make some accommodation to it. Also a system in which both the rich tribes and the poor tribes have some confidence, and feel that their legitimate claims are recognised. The Anglo-American political model, which stresses the conflicts between groups and accords electoral victory to one group over all the others is not a help to Africa, but an obstacle to the solution of her problems.

### Efficient Government

Let me now come to the third problem of modernisation, namely, the need to establish an effective system of public administration which is both honest and efficient. I remarked in an earlier lecture that this administrative weakness is one important feature which distinguishes West Africa both from the communist countries and from Western Europe. Neither an abundance of money nor the best economic policies in the world will solve Africa's problems if the governments waste the money and are unable to administer the policies sensibly.

The British solution of this problem was to distinguish between politics and administration. Politicians became Ministers, and could make general policy decisions, but they must first seek the advice of administrators, and when the decision was made, must leave the carrying out of the policy to administrators. The theory behind this is that politicians are by nature corrupt and inefficient, so their powers should be strictly limited. Civil servants, on the other hand, are recruited from the middle class, and so (according to the theory) they can be trusted to govern honestly and efficiently, subject to supervision by Parliament and public.

The British division of responsibility between Ministers and administrators serves its purpose where politicians and administrators live by different ethical codes; it serves no purpose where the two live by the same code.

In Thailand, for example, the civil servants used to be as corrupt as the politicians, so little would have been gained by dividing responsibility between them on the British pattern. In the Soviet Union, where politicians and administrators both live by the same code, the Marxian version of the Protestant ethic, the distinction between party and civil service is blurred, and not much would be gained by sharpening it. In the British West Indian

island of Antigua, the politicians who came into office fifteen years ago were as honest as the administrators, but much more energetic. When the Ministers insisted on influencing matters which the British constitution normally leaves to civil servants the quality of Antigua's administration improved immensely. One cannot assume that civil servants are everywhere better material than the politicians.

West African civil servants have been more honest and efficient than West African politicians, especially at the top levels of the civil service — the bottom levels are notoriously prone to expect a dash. Even the top levels, however, are not quite what they might be, because of what I have already said about middle-class traditions. The urban middle class is a new phenomenon in Africa, not grounded in the Protestant ethic, and much preoccupied with social prestige, money and conspicuous expenditures. We have the same problem in the West Indies where, as head of the University, I was much concerned about the quality of the people we were turning out. The purely academic job we were doing quite well. But the main task of a university is to produce people with high professional standards, which they put before everything else. High professional standards are grounded in high ethical standards, with a strong sense of social responsibility. Our universities tend to neglect this part of the job — tend even to dispute that they have any responsibility for the ethics of their students.

We are of course now back with consensus. West Africa will get just as effective administration as it wants to have, whether from its politicians or its civil servants. If, as in so many Latin American countries during the nineteenth century, the general consensus is for plundering the public purse, then the public purse is going to be plundered whatever system of government you may devise. Whereas, if the consensus is to throw the rascals out, a country will have clean and effective government whatever may be the division of responsibilities as between politicians, judges, and civil servants.

This consensus, as I have suggested earlier on, is a function of a sense of purpose. The European politicians came to power to carry out a programme; they were inspired by a vision of a new society. West African politicians have had no programme; modernisation preceded them, and did not depend on them. They threw the British out so that power could pass from European to African hands, and having acquired power they set out to enjoy it. Most African Ministers had no knowledge of the prob-

lems of their Ministries, and cared less. Africa's politics will not improve until the politicians spring out of their people's problems, and know what they want to do before they arrive in office.

This is a point where African intellectuals could make a substantial contribution. The politicians come to office ill-informed and without programmes because there has been so little research and discussion of concrete problems. There is plenty of propaganda of a general sort — anti-imperialist, or anti-capitalist or anti-something else. But detailed analysis of the problems now facing the Ministry of Education, or of the decisions which the Minister of Agriculture will have to make within the next six months, or of the problems now bugging the hospital programme is markedly absent from the African political literature. This is the kind of job which the Fabian Society started doing some eighty years ago, and which, with similar work by liberal and conservative groups, has made it possible for men in public life to be well informed about the various decisions which the government has to make. If African intellectuals really want to have a profound influence on African public life, this is what they have to do; study and publish detailed analyses of concrete matters which must at some time go before Parliament. Without this background most African Parliaments are helpless. When the Minister tables a 70-page bill with 200 clauses, how many Members know or can find out enough to be able to criticise it intelligently? For a Member to do this he must have had earlier access to literature which he could study quietly at home. Here lies the intellectual's primary contribution to politics.

Instead of assisting in this way, African intellectuals are easily tempted by the opportunity to gain quick notoriety by issuing pontifical statements on subjects which they have not studied in detail. This is not an African disease; it is a disease of intellectuals all over the world. So well known is this disease that an intellectual has been defined as "a professional man who is making a statement about some subject other than his own", since when a man is talking about his own subject we do not call him an intellectual. We say he is a doctor, or a poet, or a physicist, or whatever he may be. These pronouncements by intellectuals count for nothing in the advanced countries. In Europe or North America the mass of the people are hostile to the intellectuals and pay no attention to anything they say. But in Africa or the West Indies intellectuals are treated with great deference: the masses of the people think, wrongly, that a man with a PH.D. is the highest product of the African intellect: a greater credit to our society

than a man who has merely made money or acquired political power. What the intellectuals say seems important, and can therefore be very dangerous. An intellectual in Europe can say anything he likes, almost in fun, because it will not matter. But an intellectual in Africa ought not to open his mouth on public questions unless he has studied all the facts and is quite sure of what he is going to say. The African or West Indian intellectual who pontificates on a public issue which he has not studied in detail matches Lord Baldwin's delineation of the harlot as a person who throughout the ages has exercised power without responsibility. Please note that I am arguing not that African intellectuals should talk less, but, on the contrary, that they should write more, and not just the easy journalistic day-to-day criticism, which was all that we needed in our colonialist past, but writing based on detailed study, and leading to practical constructive proposals. Our intellectuals should try to ensure that any group of politicians which comes to power does so knowing in advance what the main issues are, and what the snags are in each of the possible solutions. Where are the African Fabian Societies or political party research departments?

One effect of publishing good policy analyses would be, as in the British case, to reduce the party political element in administration. It is quite normal in Britain for the conservatives to adopt policies which were first advocated and explored in socialist literature, and for the Labour Party to put into effect measures hitherto identified with the Conservative Party. The closer one gets to detailed analyses of the problems themselves, the more remote is the party element, and the closer one comes to consensus among reasonable people.

### Consensus

Thus when I try to assess the political future of West Africa, and the possibility that modernisation will be completed, everything seems to lead back to consensus, whether it be the prospect of restraining private consumption, or the effort to build a nation, or the need to establish an effective administration. I keep searching for a group of leaders capable of inspiring this consensus. The search is somewhat dispiriting since the current political atmosphere of West Africa is one of extremism rather than of compromise.

I do not here refer so much to tribalism, though that is menacing enough, even to the point of civil war in Nigeria. In that unfortunate country, the educated were even more tribalist than the uneducated, with some of the nastiest incidents occurring inside the universities themselves. Elsewhere the educated are, I think, less tribalist and more nation minded, and one can permit oneself the hope that this awkward corner will eventually be rounded safely. The essential conditions for success are known. Every region must have self-government in local affairs, accompanied by what I have called decentralisation of finance. And every important tribe must be represented in the Cabinet. I have argued elsewhere (in *Politics in West Africa*) that this requires coalition government, on the continental European pattern, and that the Anglo-American pattern of Government party versus Opposition party is inappropriate and damaging to plural societies, who need political systems which enshrine consensus rather than the Anglo-American idea of conquest. The only kind of democracy which is feasible in West Africa at present is the coalition type of democracy which continental Europe prefers. I need not pursue this line, both because I have already argued it at length, and also because my current emphasis is on willingness to cooperate, and if this willingness exists the institutions will come right.

More troublesome than tribalism is the extremist manner of West African politics, even though this again is not my main worry. I refer to the inflammatory language politicians use, and the way they behave towards each other. It seems impossible to assume that your political opponent is just as gentlemanly and honest as you are, and equally sincere even though on the wrong side. Instead one lives by whipping up mass hatreds, one screams abuse, impugns motives, and practises character assassination. This is the sort of atmosphere in which a thousand people can be imprisoned without trial merely for being on the wrong side; or the atmosphere, as in Northern Nigeria, where the masses can be incited to murder their fellow townsmen in cold blood. The extremist language and tactics of West African politics are incompatible with good government. Of course one understands the origins of this violence; it is a legacy of the movement towards independence. National struggles are always highly emotional. They are conducted by men convinced of the moral superiority of their cause to the point of believing that the end justifies the means. This is compounded, once independence looms in sight, by the struggle which then occurs between the rival nationalist groups themselves, as to which is

to inherit the power. After such turbulent events, it takes quite some time for the political temperature to fall to a healthy level.

What bothers me is not so much these outward manifestations of extremism as the fact that West Africa is indeed ripe for extremist politics because of the high level of its disaffection. Economic development has produced numerous groups who are acutely frustrated and willing to follow a leader who promises drastic action to solve all their problems quickly. There are the school leavers, piling up unemployed in the towns. There are the trade unionists, convinced of capitalist exploitation. What the British call the lower middle classes—the school teachers, the junior civil servants and the commercial clerks—have ambitions for personal expenditure way beyond their current incomes. The farmers, overtaxed by the government, and exploited by traders, are looking for a new deal. West Africa is extremely ripe for radical political movements. If democracy prevails in West Africa, it will always return radical political leaders. Here in Ghana some conservatives hope to return to business as it was before 1950, but I am sure that they are mistaken. Only radical leadership has any long-term future in West Africa.

The problem is whether this radicalism will flow into the liberal or into the authoritarian stream. The kind of discontent that I am talking about has always been excellent material for fascist and communist groups. The struggle will be between the liberal radicals on the one hand and the authoritarian radicals on the other. In this kind of struggle the authoritarians have the advantage that they unite, whereas liberals tend to split into factions which fight each other rather than their authoritarian enemy. Ghana has been through all this once before, and will go through it again, regrettably, unless those on the liberal side have the sense to unite before it is too late.

Can West Africa produce leaders who are radical enough to win the loyalties of discontented masses, but liberal enough to proceed by compromise rather than by arbitrary force? Who are tribalist enough to win seats in their local constituencies while still retaining the respect and confidence of men from other tribes? Who are clever enough to give something to everybody out of an increasing national income, while at the same time steadily increasing the share of saving and investment? The answer is of course Yes. West Africans have had long centuries of political experience in highly organised states, long before Britain or France arrived on the scene. The tradition of these states, as we are always reminded, was to

#### SOME ASPECTS OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT

base action on compromise and conciliation, after extended palaver. All that is needed is to return to this tradition.

It is remarkable what a difference just one or two sensible leaders can make to the whole temper of a country. Take for instance the following riddle. The political temper of seventeenth century Britain was more violent and extremist than anything that has happened recently in West Africa. Anglicans, Puritans and Catholics were at each others' throats. One king was executed and another chased off the throne. An observer writing, say, around the year 1715, after the abortive rebellion of that year, would have described Britain as a violent country where consensus was unthinkable. Yet from the middle of the eighteenth century, just thirty years later, Britain was being held up on the continent as the model of a politically stable society. What had happened in that interval of thirty years? Historians now agree that a major element, though not the only one, was the fact that Sir Robert Walpole became Prime Minister in 1721, and held the office for twenty one years. Walpole was a compromiser, who made it his business to conciliate all the major groups who were fighting each other. For example, the religious dissenters wanted him to repeal the Test Act, which prevented them from holding public office. He would not do this, for fear of starting a huge row with the established church. Instead, every year he passed an Act of Indemnity, which excused those dissenters who had held office during the preceding year, and this compromise, once established, continued for over a century. Walpole's main objective was to bring peace to his distracted country and bind up its wounds, and in this he succeeded perfectly.

My generation was an ideological generation. We had no use for compromisers. Our heroes were the men wedded to great principles, to socialism, independence, negritude or other great ideas. One consequence of our high emotional level is that ours has been the bloodiest generation since the seventeenth century, killing, or liquidating, as we now say, about 25 million people in the course of 50 years. I think that what West Africa now needs is some first-class compromisers, who will bind up the wounds of their respective countries, and lay solid foundations for growth. They may not win our love or adulation, but they will certainly deserve our gratitude.

W. ARTHUR LEWIS

THE PRINCIPLES OF  
ECONOMIC PLANNING

*A study prepared for the  
Fabian Society*

NEW EDITION  
WITH A NEW INTRODUCTION

LONDON  
UNWIN UNIVERSITY BOOKS



FIRST PUBLISHED IN GREAT BRITAIN IN 1949  
BY DENNIS DOBSON LTD., ST. JAMES'S, LONDON, S.W.1  
AND GEORGE ALLEN AND UNWIN LTD., MUSEUM STREET,  
LONDON, W.C.1

*Second Impression 1950*

*Second Edition, Third Impression 1952*

*Fourth Impression 1954*

*Fifth Impression 1956*

*Sixth Impression 1959*

*Seventh Impression 1961*

*Eighth Impression 1963*

*This book is copyright under the Berne Convention. Apart from any fair dealing for the purposes of private study, research, criticism or review, as permitted under the Copyright Act 1956, no portion may be reproduced by any process without written permission. Enquiry should be made to the publisher.*

UNWIN UNIVERSITY BOOKS

*George Allen & Unwin Ltd*

*40 Museum Street, London, W.C.1*

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN  
BY THE COMPTON PRINTING WORKS  
LONDON, N.1

## PREFACE TO THE THIRD IMPRESSION

THIS book was originally published without a Preface. The reason for this is that it was never meant to be a book. The Fabian Society asked for a pamphlet on the economic perplexities of the moment, and this was what I set out to write. Unfortunately the perplexities were so numerous that the pamphlet turned up at 120 pages, instead of their usual thirty. So it was put between hard covers.

I set out these facts not merely to explain the absence of a Preface, but also to account for some of the book's more curious features. It is not, as its title might suggest, an academic study of theoretical principles, but is rather a political statement. Neither does it cover the whole field of planning, but concentrates rather on some topics which happened to be of special interest in Great Britain in the summer of 1948, when it was written. Perhaps it was wrongly named. It should have been called a 'Brief Statement on some Current Topics in Planning'; but it is too late now to change its name.

The book was well received, partly because it did prove to be very relevant to the problems of the day. But it gave pain to all my friends. The 'planners' amongst them complained that I had written an 'anti-planning' book, while the 'anti-planners' complained of an excessive fondness for government intervention. Since the book was neither for planning nor against it, this showed that I had failed to make its purpose clear. Accordingly I gladly seize the opportunity of this reprinting to say another word on this subject.

The word 'planning' is used in many different senses in current literature. At least six different meanings can be distinguished.

First, there is an enormous literature in which it refers only to the geographical zoning of factories, residential buildings, cinemas and the like. Sometimes this is called 'town and country planning', and sometimes just 'planning'.

Secondly, a very large number of countries have published documents setting out programmes of public expenditure extending over two or four or five or even ten years. In this literature, 'planning' means only deciding what the government will spend money on in the future, if it has the money to spend.

Thirdly, in a small, highly specialised part of the literature of economic theory, a 'planned economy' is one in which each production unit (or firm) uses only the resources of men, materials and equipment allocated to it by quota, and disposes of its product exclusively to persons or firms indicated to it by central order. The manager thus has little or no choice in buying or in selling, because he must work according to a plan sent to him from the central government. And such an economy does not, in its most rigorous form, need to use money.

Fourthly, at the other extreme, 'planning' sometimes means any setting of production targets by the government, whether for private or for public enterprise. Most governments practise this type of planning, if only sporadically, and if only for one or two industries or services to which

## THE PRINCIPLES OF ECONOMIC PLANNING

they attach special importance. If they begin to set targets for a wide range of industries, the problem of consistency very soon arises, and they are driven to analyse the whole economy, and to consider the repercussions throughout the economy of any further interventions they may wish to make.

The fifth type of planning then arises. Here targets are set for the economy as a whole, purporting to allocate all the country's labour, foreign exchange, raw materials and other resources between the various branches of the economy. The result, on paper, is a series of interlocking statistical tables.

And, finally, the word 'planning' is sometimes used to describe the means which the government uses to try to enforce upon private enterprise the targets which have been previously determined.

Clearly, any person who uses a word with such different meanings, and who does not indicate right at the outset in which senses he is using the word, is asking for trouble.

This book is wholly unconcerned with the laudable practices which are described in the first two categories enumerated above.

The third kind of planning is a totalitarian nightmare, which is not in fact practised even in the most totalitarian countries. It is briefly referred to in Chapter I, and dismissed.

This book is about the three other kinds of planning, but it is not about them all in equal measure. Its prime concern is the sixth: assuming that the government knows what economic results it wishes to achieve; how should it set about persuading or forcing private enterprise to fall into line?

The assumption is enormous. The last chapter of the book discusses briefly the fifth subject to which the title 'planning' is given, namely how the government can try to get some order and consistency into its own setting of targets, by a process of interlocking budgets. But this still leaves the large question: how does the government know what economic results it should be trying deliberately to bring about? This question is discussed briefly in the first chapter and again through all the other chapters, in terms largely of what goes wrong if the economic system is left to run itself. There are many people convinced that government attempts to better the results of the economic system can only make good bad, or even make bad worse. That the question does not receive in this book the attention they think it merits is due mainly to the fact that, since most British politicians agree that the government should try to remedy defects in the working of the economy, and since most British economists agree what these defects are, it did not seem necessary in a brief pamphlet, for British readers, in the summer of 1948 to discuss these matters in greater elaboration.

The main issue in that summer, and the main topic to which the book is addressed was, assuming that the government knows what its targets are, how should it set about bringing private enterprise into line?

The planners, in this context, are those who wish to proceed mainly by surrounding people with licences, quotas, and other orders specifying where they may work, what they may make, where and what they may buy, and to whom they may sell. The anti-planners are those who prefer to induce the co-operation of private individuals and firms by making it more remunerative for them to do the things the government wishes to see done, rather than to do anything else.

## PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION

The book takes more or less a neutral position. It begins by establishing a preference for planning by inducement wherever this is practicable. But it also shows that this is adequate only where the mobility of resources is sufficient to bring about the desired results by inducement in a sufficient space of time. Wherever mobility is inadequate, it comes down on the side of licensing and other forms of direction. But, because of its prejudice against direction, it also concludes that one of the major functions of a government should be greatly to increase the mobility of resources. For this reason the central chapter of the book is that which deals with mobility.

It is the fate of every author to complain that his book is praised or blamed for the wrong reasons. I have not escaped this fate. I am neither a planner nor an anti-planner, in the special sense of this controversy. I am both planner and anti-planner, according to the circumstances of the problem, and the major purpose of the book is to analyse the circumstances in which the one means is preferable to the other.

Having got this grievance off my chest, I may now turn to the other grievance which is the fate of every writer on political economy. This, as the reader will suspect, is the grievance that the government of the day has not followed his advice! In other words, writing now in the summer of 1951, what does one see as major problems in planning which the government still has not solved?

This section, alas, is very easy to write, because all that one has to do is to reprint the 'Review' which appears as the last three pages of the final Chapter, and which asked the same question for 1948. That 'Review' listed three major errors, and some less important. They all remain, with one important exception.

One of the three major errors was pursuit of an inflationary policy. There is still some inflation in the British economy: how much is open to argument. But it is beyond all question that the Government has made a valiant attempt in the past three years to end inflation, and that it has succeeded in this better than have most other governments in the world.

Of the other major errors, one was the absence of any proper policy to bring about a sensible distribution of labour between the various sectors of the economy. This is not quite as bad as it was in 1948, but it is still very bad. In consequence of this we still cannot produce for export all that foreigners would like to buy from us, so that we still remain short of imports, including some important foodstuffs, and are still piling up overseas debts (even, unforgiveably, debts to some very poor British colonies, which are made to take 'sterling balances', instead of goods, for part of what they send to us). In consequence of this, too, we had another serious fuel crisis in the winter of 1950-51, and have no plans for preventing even worse fuel crises in winters to come. Mobility is the key to economic planning. But, in so much that is written on the British planning achievement, either for or against the government, how much is written about rationing, price controls, fair shares, and the like, and how seldom is there reference to the major and almost untackled problem of mobility!

'The second shortcoming,' says the 'Review,' 'has been in foreign trade policy, where we have tried to stabilise both the internal and the external values of the pound simultaneously, with disastrous consequences for the terms of trade.' This is just as true in 1951 as it was in 1948.

Chapter V of the book argues that, if we wish to stabilise the internal

## THE PRINCIPLES OF ECONOMIC PLANNING

price level, then we should destabilise the value of the pound in terms of the dollar, appreciating in boom, and depreciating in slump. The pound was, indeed, devalued during the 1949 slump, and partly, but not wholly, in consequence, the adverse balance of payments disappeared in 1950 for the first time in nearly twenty years. But in the subsequent boom we have failed to appreciate again. Prices of imports have risen sharply, with only a small rise in the prices of exports, and for 1951 we face again an adverse balance of several hundred million pounds.

We also face a further consequence, to which the end of Chapter III refers. If we stabilise the external value of the pound, our cost of living rises in booms, and any attempt to keep wage movements under control, in face of rising prices, is bound to fail. The summer of 1951 now finds us caught in a wage-price spiral, with the very successful wages policy of 1948 to 1950 no longer acceptable, and with the chances of agreeing a long-term formula for wage determination now slimmer than ever.

It may be that it is best to stabilise the external value of the pound, and to find other means of stabilising the cost of living, and of varying the prices of our exports according to the state of the world market. The book discusses these alternatives. What cannot be right is the policy which we now pursue.

Finally, the 'Review' says: 'There are many other planning errors that have been made, such as slowness in taking steps to increase the productivity of private enterprise, failure to reform the income tax and to impose a capital levy, the passing of inadequate legislation for monopoly control, and the absence of adequate safeguards of the public interest in nationalised industries; but at the present moment these are minor in comparison with the three major errors.' None of these lesser errors has been corrected. On the other hand, they are nearly all more widely recognised to-day than they were then, and are more widely discussed in all political circles.

The original text of the book is here reprinted without alteration. If the demand for the book continues, it may need substantial revision on a later occasion; but the time for this has not yet arrived.

MANCHESTER,  
July, 1951.

W. A. L.

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
I WHY PLAN?	7
II FAIR SHARES FOR ALL	30
III MONEY	41
IV INVESTMENT	52
V FOREIGN TRADE	62
VI MOBILITY	75
VII THE SOCIAL CONTROL OF BUSINESS	87
VIII NATIONALISATION	99
IX HOW TO PLAN	107

## APPENDICES

1 ON ECONOMIC UNION	115
2 ON PLANNING IN BACKWARD COUNTRIES	121

# I

## *Why Plan?*

THE dispute between planning and *laisser-faire* is not a dispute between order and anarchy in economic life. All serious political thinkers, and not least the *laisser-faire* philosophers, start with the proposition that production and distribution must be controlled to the service of social ends. The point at issue is simply how much of this control may be invisible, and how much must be visible. The invisible control, extolled by the *laisser-faire* protagonists, is that which the market exercises; the visible control, favoured by the planners, is that which is organised by the state.

The control exercised by the market is none the less real and powerful because it is invisible. In a free economy production is controlled by demand. Capitalists cannot produce what they like; self-interest drives them to produce what they can sell, and that is determined by what people demand, and by how much they demand of it. Production for profit is thus, by 'the invisible hand', transmuted into production for use. By the same agency the distribution of income is controlled. Producers cannot charge what they like, for the forces of competition are ever driving prices down to the level of costs, and for ever driving capitalists to improve their efficiency. The free market is thus a powerful instrument of social control, which directs production to the service of demand, stimulates progress, and eliminates excessive earnings.

The case against the invisible control, in favour of state control, cannot proceed by way of blank denial. It is obvious that the invisible hand exists, and that its influence is beneficial. Neither can the case be founded, as some suppose, on attacking the self-interest which is the driving force of the market economy. For every economic system devised for ordinary human beings must have self interest as its driving force. This does not make an economic system anti-social. The purpose

of such a system, indeed the very nature of an economic system, is the mechanism through which, by making what society needs most become what is most profitable to the individual, it transmutes individual self-interest into the public good. Even if the economic system were completely planned from the centre it would need a mechanism by which those who planned well, or executed their orders well, were rewarded above those who planned badly or were poor executants. No; the case against the market economy is not that it does not tend to promote the social good. The dispute is whether state control could not do better, either as an alternative, or as a supplement.

#### SOCIALISM AND THE STATE

In any comparison between the state and alternative social institutions which can serve the same purpose, the state starts, either with the dice loaded against it, if one is a liberal, so that it must do not just as well but much better if it is to be accepted; or with the dice loaded in its favour, if one is a fascist, so that it will be accepted unless it does much worse. Much of the current worship and denunciation of planning springs from these personal predispositions rather than from any objective consideration of particular merits.

The controversy over the role of the state is as old as human society, and so is its offshoot, the dispute about planning. We know of no society, in any place or time, in which the state has not played an active part in regulating production and distribution, or in which there have not been advocates of greater regulation and advocates of less. In our own day the advocates of greater regulation are more on the left, and the advocates of less are more on the right, but this has not always been so; the dispute about planning cuts right across left and right, and has nothing to do with the dispute about socialism.

As the pendulum swings, the powers of the state fluctuate between being too great and being too small. In 18th century England the state handicapped progress by regulating the economy excessively. The attack on the state was thus led by the progressives, and resisted by the conservatives. In the first half of the twentieth century the pendulum has been swinging the other way. The conservatives, who in the 18th century



defended planning, now have to resist it; and the left, which was advocating *laissez-faire*, now has to denounce it. This is why in our day the left is associated with planning and the right with *laissez-faire*; but if we examine the basic philosophies of left and right in Britain we shall not find that either is fundamentally committed either for or against the state. Both are for and against the state according to circumstances.

Socialism, in particular, contrary to popular belief, is not committed either by its history or by its philosophy, to the glorification of the state or to the extension of its powers. On the contrary, the links of socialism are with liberalism and with anarchism, with their emphasis on individual freedom, and in opposition to the extended state. The nineteenth century socialists were not predominantly well disposed to the state, and in the blue prints of socialist society which they constructed the state receives frequently only a minor role. The state, for example, plays little part in the socialist schemes of Robert Owen, or William Morris or J. L. Bray. Marx, of course, tried to discredit all pre-Marxian socialists by dubbing them 'utopian'; but even Marx says little about the role of the state in the new socialist society, and that little is derogatory. It was Lenin, not Marx, who made 'the dictatorship of the proletariat' the central feature of Marxian socialism. Apart from Lenin, the only other important socialist in the nineteenth century whose socialism essentially involved a powerful state machine was Sidney Webb. The Fabian Society never wholly followed Webb in his glorification of the state even in his own day; and the leader of the next generation of Fabians, G. D. H. Cole, was a fervent exponent of Guild Socialism, a form of socialism in which the state has only a very attenuated role. For Fabians the last word on this subject was said not by Sidney but by Beatrice Webb, who wrote in 1894:

How far, I wonder, will the collectivist principle carry us? The thinkers of fifty years ago believed as firmly in individualism as we believe in collectivism—probably more uncompromisingly; for the men and women of today distrust general principles even though they be prepared to use them. And yet it is easy to see now that the settled conviction of the individualists that government should be limited to keeping the ring clear for private individuals to fight in, was based on the experience of a one-sided and corrupt participation of the government in industrial organisation, and not on any

necessary characteristic of state action. Face to face with the government action of their own day they were to a large extent right. Is it not possible that it is the same with collectivism? Public administration is the alternative to private enterprise, and since private enterprise is corrupt and selfish we propose to supersede it by democratic control. But it is, on the face of it, as unlikely that the collectivist principle will apply all round as that the individualist principle would solve all the social problems of fifty years ago. I do not think that we Fabians believe in more than a limited application of the collectivist principle; though, as practical politicians we think that we are as yet nowhere near the margin of cultivation, that we can cultivate this principle vigorously for all that it is worth, in all directions without exhausting its vitality. But of one thing I feel certain. The controversy which seems to us now so full of significance and import will seem barren and useless to our great-grandchildren; they will be amazed that we fought so hard to establish one metaphysical position and to destroy another. (*Our Partnership*, pp. 117-8.)

Opposite views of other socialists could equally be quoted, for there is no single socialist view of the state or of the part that it should play. The fact is that it has been with socialists, as it has been with liberals and conservatives, that some are for extending the powers of the state, and some for reducing these powers. The Liberal Party, after all, once had a Cabinet that included Asquith, Winston Churchill and Lloyd George, with as diverse a collection of views on the state as one could find anywhere; and the Conservative Party now runs in harness Winston Churchill and R. A. Butler. The dispute on the role of the state is not a dispute between parties, but runs right through the parties themselves.

Socialists have rather lost their perspective of this, and have sometimes seemed to welcome every extension of state powers. Perhaps this is because the two most recent influences, Lenin and Webb, were both worshippers of the state. But some confusion is also due to misunderstanding the socialist attitude towards property. Socialism and nationalisation of property are now commonly identified, but this is as great an error as the identification of socialism and the extended state. Socialism is not, in the first instance, about property any more than it is about the state. Socialism is about equality. A passion for equality is the one thing that links all socialists; on all others they are divided. Because they are concerned about equality

socialists have to be concerned about property, since the present system of property is the most important cause of inequality. But subject to the over-riding claims of equality, socialism is not committed to any one way of dealing with property, and property can be handled in many ways that are not inconsistent with socialism. For example it can be redistributed so that each family has the same amount; this is what is done after agrarian revolutions, and though it retains individual ownership of property it is not inconsistent with socialism, as Tito has recently reminded Stalin, so long as the distribution is just, and so long as there is enough land to go round without condemning each family to work on too small and uneconomic a unit. Redistribution of land is frowned on by socialists in overcrowded Europe, but it is the essence of socialistic objectives in the newer and less crowded parts of the world. Or, secondly, property can be handed over to the workers to be operated cooperatively, on a profit sharing basis; this, and not nationalisation, was the favourite of socialist writers in the 19th century. Even in the third alternative, where property is nationalised, the role of the state is not necessarily large; the state can hand industries over to public boards and tell them to get on with the job without any central planning at all, leaving it to the public trust to buy and sell in the market, and to be regulated by demand just as would any private firm. So long as these different ways of handling property are all based on equality we cannot say that one is more socialist than the others, for socialism is not a particular way of dealing with property; it is a demand for equality and social justice.

It is also a demand for individual liberty. In the dispute about the powers of the state the traditions of socialism are rooted in liberalism. The bias of socialists, in recent times, has come to be in favour of using the state in place of other social institutions, but this is only a recent growth. The real traditions of socialism are opposed to this. The liberal tradition is to hand nothing over to the state that cannot be done nearly as well by some other social institution. Socialists who cannot go as far as this should at least pause before assuming that every suggested extension of the state has the traditions of the socialist movement on its side.

## THE MARKET ECONOMY

The object of this digression has been to prepare the ground for impartial consideration of the merits of visible and invisible controls. The dispute, we have seen, is not about objectives but about efficiency. The market economy tends to control production and distribution in the public interest; the question is whether planning could not do better, either as an alternative, or as a supplement.

Even the greatest worshipper of *laissez-faire* has never suggested that there should be no state. Everyone agrees that there are certain minimum functions for which it is absolutely essential. Adam Smith listed defence, justice, education and roads and communications. Economists following in his footsteps have expanded the list, and reduced it to general principles. Enshrined in the textbooks as beyond controversy, the state has duties in respect of (a) things which only the state can enforce (e.g. justice, defence); (b) things which diffuse benefits for which the beneficiaries cannot be charged (e.g. lighthouses); and (c) things in which the judgment of the state is superior to that of the citizens. This last is a growing category: the state now claims to know better than its citizens for how many years they should send their children to school, between what hours they should drink, what proportion of income should be saved, whether cheap housing is better than cheap cigarettes, and so on. Whether any particular case fits into one of these categories is frequently open to dispute, but the categories are well accepted as laying the absolute minimum of functions for the state.

The case against *laissez-faire* is much more formidable than this. It rests on the following counts.

First, under a *laissez-faire* system income is not fairly distributed; and as a corollary of this, less urgent goods are produced for wealthy people while the poor lack education, health, good food, decent houses and ordinary comforts which could be supplied instead. This is no longer denied. The price mechanism rewards people according to the scarcity of the resources (labour and property) that they possess, but it does not itself contain any mechanism for equalising the distribution of scarcities. For justice in distribution we have clearly to summon the forces of the state.

The second weakness is related; the market mechanism does not humanise the wage relation. This is not a simple issue. Employment for wages arises out of the fact that the workers do not own the instruments with which they work. Some socialists have wished to abolish this relation altogether by redistributing property to the workers, as is done in agrarian revolutions, to be worked either individually or in cooperative groups. Any other solution, whether it leaves property to capitalists or hands it over to the state, retains the wage relation, and can seek only to humanise it by guaranteeing the worker's rights, and by insisting on his sharing in decisions. Of course it is arguable that in perfect competition and in full employment employers would have to court labour, so that the price mechanism, rid of its imperfections, would ensure to labour protection of its rights. Perhaps it would, but the state is a much more certain protection.

This brings us to the third defect of the market economy, its instability. Private enterprise in the creation of money produces cycles, unemployment and misery. To be sure, state enterprise in the creation of money has had no better record; the case for private enterprise in this field rested for centuries on the unchallengeable ground that control by the state had always proved to be much worse. The present unanimity of British thinkers in favour of state control of money (there is no similar unanimity in the U.S.A.) is very recent, and due only to conviction that new secrets have been discovered which reverse the advantages in favour of the state.

Equally inadequate, on the fourth count, is the market's handling of foreign monies. The case that foreign trade is self-regulating was argued long and stoutly by the protagonists of *laissez-faire*, but the same advances in monetary theory have now finally exploded this myth. Foreign trade must be regulated by the state.

Fifthly, the market economy is ineffective in coping with major change. Where resources need to be moved in considerable degree, its methods are too slow and cruel. Scarcities are not quickly eliminated, with the result that a few persons receive abnormally large incomes at the public's expense, and that scarce commodities are unjustly distributed; and at the same time over-production is not quickly reduced, with the

result that other persons suffer abnormally low incomes. State action to speed the mobility of resources is clearly needed.

Next, the market economy is wasteful. Competition induces producers to improve their techniques; but it also induces them to spend heavily on sales promotion, and to evade standardisation. But here the case is not so clear. The case for *laissez-faire* in the 18th and 19th centuries was the wastefulness and stupidity of bureaucratic operations; on the subject of waste we must clearly not proceed by simple generalisations.

This part of the case against the market economy is bound up with the final count, the fact that the merits of the market depend on the existence of competition, and that perfect competition is rare. It is clear that nothing in the market mechanism itself either establishes or maintains competition. Only state action can assure competition. In this, as in so much else, the market economy cannot function adequately without positive support from the state.

#### PLANNING BY DIRECTION

It has been possible to state the counts in this indictment of *laissez-faire* so briefly because they are now accepted by most serious political thinkers. There are no longer any believers in *laissez-faire*, except on the lunatic fringe. There are many who denounce planning in fierce language, and who appear by implication to be arguing for *laissez-faire*, but, on closer examination there are always a few pages in their books which give the game away. The truth is that we are all planners now.

That is not to say that we believe in all forms of planning or in complete central planning. *Laissez-faire* can be complete, or it can be modified by state action at many crucial points. Similarly planning can be complete, or it can be combined with a market economy in various degrees.

In fact, the central issue in the discussion of planning is not whether there shall be planning but what form it shall take, and in particular whether the state shall operate through the price mechanism or in supercession of it. Suppose, for example, that the government decides that, in the interests of children's health, the production of milk ought to be increased. No one questions that this is a reasonable sort of decision for

the government to make. But there are many ways of fulfilling this plan, some more direct than others, and some more effective. It might pass a law making it illegal for those responsible for a child to give the child less than one pint of milk a day (just as it is illegal to give the child less than a stipulated amount of education). Or it might increase family allowances, and urge parents to spend the increase on extra milk. Or it might issue free milk tickets to each child, and refund the cost to milk retailers. Or it might purchase milk, and feed this to children in schools. These are measures it might take on the side of demand; they have their parallel on the side of supply. It might pay subsidies to milk producers, thus reducing the price and stimulating both consumption and production. It might set up its own state farms, and give the milk away. Or it might pass a law instructing each milk producer to increase his output by a stipulated amount. All these ways of fulfilling the milk plan are forms of planning, and of course a planner may reject some and accept others. The fundamental difference is between methods that achieve their result by persuasion and those that achieve it by command. Making milk cheaper is an inducement to extra consumption, and paying milk subsidies is an inducement to extra production; both are planning through the price mechanism. On the other hand, ordering people to purchase more milk or producers to produce more is planning by direction. The real choice we have to make is between planning by inducement, and planning by direction.

Complete planning by direction is just as much ruled out as is complete *laissez-faire*. To begin with, it cannot be applied to consumption. The Government knows better than the citizen how he should spend his income in certain spheres; we all admit this, but they are limited spheres. By and large the citizen demands freedom of choice in consumption; freedom to spend his money as he pleases. Rationing is abhorred, except in emergency, and so is payment of wages in kind. There must, therefore, be money, and a consumers' market. This is a severe limitation on planning, for it means that the results of planning are tested in the consumers' market. If, for example, too many resources are devoted to investment, a general shortage shows up in the consumers' market, and even if there is no general shortage, there will be particular shortages unless the balance

of production is just right. Freedom of choice in consumption therefore exerts pressure for free adjustment of production to demand. The government may plan demand, by taking steps to secure a just distribution of income, but once it has done this the pressure is all against trying to plan production by direction when consumption is free.

Secondly, the worker demands freedom to choose his own job. This means that there must be a labour market, as well as a consumers' market, and that the social task of getting labour into the right jobs in the right proportions must be achieved not by direction but by inducement. This also is a big limitation on planning, for plans which can only be fulfilled by moving labour by direction are bound to fail.

There must be a market for the consumer, and there must be a market for labour. That leaves the markets for enterprise, capital and raw materials in the balance. The manager of a firm (private, cooperative or state trust) has to be able to sell what he produces, and has to attract labour by inducement. Should he be free to adjust himself in markets for enterprise, capital and raw materials, or should he produce what he is directed to produce with resources that are allocated to him?

There is nothing in the case for planning which requires the choice of methods that put industrial managers into a straight jacket. There is, we have seen, a formidable case for regulating markets in many ways, and with many objects in view, but nothing in this case calls for issuing directions to managers which diminish their freedom to adjust production to the market forces of supply and demand.

There is, on the other hand, a formidable case against planning by direction, and in favour of using the market.

In the first place, the central planner, who issues the directions, cannot hope to see and provide for all the consequences of his actions. The economic system is exceedingly complex. If you plan to increase the output of watches you must at the same time plan to increase the output of everything complementary to watches, i.e. everything used with watches or in making watches, and to reduce the output of all substitutes for watches and the constituents of substitutes. Now no single person can make a complete list of all the complements and substitutes of watches, or decide what will be all the economic effects of having more



watches. And even if he could make a list for watches, he would need also to make a separate list for each of the complements and substitutes, each of which has to be planned, and again separate lists for each of their complements and substitutes, and so on. It is because of this complexity that the fulfilment of plans by direction is always so unsatisfactory. Thousands of engines are produced, but they have to be stored through shortage of ball bearings or of screws. In planning by direction the result is always a shortage of some things, and a surplus of others. Planning through the market (e.g. the state placing an order for watches, or paying a subsidy) handles all this better because, in any sphere that is affected by the decision to have more watches, the flow of money and the adjustment of prices acts as a 'governor', turning on or off automatically without any central direction.

Secondly, and for the same reason, planning by direction has to be inflexible. Once the planners have made the thousands of calculations that are necessary to fit the plan together, and have issued their directions, any demand that any of the figures be revised is bound to be resisted. The plan once made must be adhered to simply because you cannot alter any part of it without altering the whole, and altering the whole is too elaborate a job to be done frequently. The price mechanism can adjust itself from day to day, the flow of money alters, and prices and production respond; but the economy planned by direction is inflexible.

The third defect follows from these two. As the plan proceeds fulfilment is bound to be imperfect—even if the plan was perfect when it was made, conditions change. Firm X has been given a permit to buy coal; but there has been a strike, or an accident, or bad weather, and it cannot get its allocation of coal. It therefore wants to buy oil, but the oil has all been allocated, and a complete reallocation of oil is too big a job to undertake at short notice. So firm X must close, or it must buy an allocation of oil from some other firm whose need for oil is not so urgent. This has had, in most centrally planned economies, the curious consequence that the plan works smoothly only because it is supplemented by black markets in which firms can adjust themselves to changing conditions. However, given adequate stocks, a centrally planned economy

could carry its mistakes without interrupting production, just as in a market economy it is mainly the existence of stocks that acts as a buffer for the numerous errors made by private entrepreneurs. The main reason why centrally planned economies work always in an atmosphere of scarcity and of hit and miss is that central planners usually forget how important it is to plan for an adequate holding of stocks, but this error is not itself inherent in central planning.

To the inflexibility and errors of planning by direction we must add its tendency to be procrustean. It is hard enough to step up the output of watches if there is only one kind of watch; if there are two kinds of watch it is more than twice as hard, and it gets progressively harder the more different types of watch there are. Central planners in consequence are always tempted to excessive standardisation, not because they think that standardisation is good for the public, but because it simplifies their job. Standardisation is frequently an engine of progress; but it is also frequently the enemy of happiness, and in foreign trade it is in many lines fatal to success.

Related to this is the stifling effect of direction on enterprise, and this is a consideration of the utmost importance in a country like the United Kingdom. This is a country which lives by foreign trade. We built up this trade by being first in the field of mass production of standard commodities. But today other nations are as good as we are at this game, if not better, and we can hold our own only if we are constantly in the vanguard pioneering new ideas; inventing new goods and processes, trying them out on the market, adjusting rapidly in accordance with consumer reaction, and so on. None of this can be foreseen, and so none of this can be planned from the centre. The future of the country depends on bold and free entrepreneurship; on people with new ideas being free to back them against all opposition, to get what resources of capital, labour and raw materials they need without bureaucratic hindrance, and to test out the market for themselves. Any form of planning which prevents this permanently, or for long periods, will be the ruin of Great Britain.

And finally, the more one tries to overcome the difficulties of planning by direction, the more costly planning becomes in terms of resources. We cannot plan without knowledge, so

we must have elaborate censuses, numerous forms and an array of clerks. We cannot issue thousands of licences rapidly without thousands of clerks. The better we try to plan, the more planners we need. The Soviet Census returns over 800,000 'economists', who are mostly administrative staff connected with planning. The price mechanism does the same job without this army of economists, who are thus released for useful work in the mines and the potato fields. To be sure, the market economy also has its army of hangers-on, who contribute to profit making rather than to production—its contact men, sales promoters, stockbrokers and the like, but they are not as essential to it as are the planners to planning.

On account of its complexity, planning by direction does not increase, but on the contrary diminishes democratic control. A plan cannot be made by 'the people' or by parliament or by the cabinet; it has to be made by officials, because it consists of thousands of details fitted together. Its results are embodied in thousands of administrative orders and decisions, of which parliament and ministers can have only the briefest knowledge, and which provide innumerable opportunities for corrupting the public service. The more we direct from the centre the less the control that is possible. When the government is doing only a few things we can keep an eye on it, but when it is doing everything it cannot even keep an eye on itself.

We said a moment ago that it is by little more than the swing of the pendulum that in these days it is the left that chiefly advocates more planning. It is therefore no surprise to find that the case against planning by direction and for using the market economy has been forcibly put by the arch-communist Leon Trotsky, who himself experienced the failure of excessive direction in the period of War Communism in Soviet Russia. This is what he says:

If there existed the universal mind that projected itself into the scientific fancy of Laplace; a mind that would register simultaneously all the processes of nature and of society, that could measure the dynamics of their motion, that could forecast the results of their inter-reactions, such a mind, of course, could *a priori* draw up a faultless and exhaustive economic plan, beginning with the number of hectares of wheat and down to the last button for a vest. In truth, the bureaucracy often conceives that just such a mind is at its disposal; that is why it so easily frees itself from the control of the

market and of Soviet democracy. . . . The innumerable living participants of the economy, State as well as private, collective as well as individual, must give notice of their needs and of their relative strength not only through the statistical determination of plan commissions but by the direct pressure of supply and demand. The plan is checked, and, to a considerable measure, realised through the market. . . . Economic accounting is unthinkable without market relations. (*Soviet Economy in Danger*, pp. 29-30, 33; quoted in Lerner, A.P., *The Economics of Control*, pp. 62, 64.)

#### PLANNING THROUGH THE MARKET

The obvious moral of all this is that our aim should be to preserve free markets wherever possible. The manager of an industrial establishment, whether private or public, should be left free to adjust his concern to market conditions; to make what he can sell, and to make it with whatever combination of resources he can most cheaply buy. This does not mean that he will be free from control; on the contrary, he is the servant of the market, which controls everything that he does. Neither does it limit the scope of planning. For the state can do all the planning it wants by controlling in its turn the market which controls the entrepreneur. The state can plan as much as it wants, but it should plan not by direction but by manipulating the market.

Thus if it wishes firms to make more of the sorts of goods that the poor buy and less of the sorts of goods that the rich buy, there is no need for a cumbersome machinery of allocations and controls. It can increase the taxation of the rich, and reduce the taxation of the poor; or it can subsidise the goods it wishes to encourage, and tax those it wishes to discourage. If it wishes to increase the production of wheat at the expense of other agricultural products there is no need for a multitude of forms, clerks and agricultural committees to fix a wheat acreage for each of 350,000 farms; it has only to raise its guaranteed price for wheat, or to increase its wheat subsidy. If it wishes to encourage exports at the expense of home consumption it need not give each firm an export allocation; it can take money out of the home market by increasing taxation, or it can alter the foreign exchange rate, or it can increase the purchase tax on goods sold in the home market, or it can pay subsidies on exports. And if it wishes to promote capital

formation at the expense of consumption it can, on the one hand, either subsidise investment or make investments itself, and on the other hand, it can simultaneously discourage consumption by taxation. In every case there is the choice between direction and inducement, and in every case inducement brings the same final result, without the costs of bureaucratic control.

Fundamentally, where planning parts company with *laissez-faire* is not in rejecting the market economy controlled by demand, but in arguing that demand itself is not sacred, but something that should be manipulated by the state. Once this is realised there is no need for planners to cling to cumbersome types of planning when they have at hand methods that can make planning work as smoothly as *laissez-faire* and with far superior results.

What makes it impossible to rely exclusively on planning by manipulating market demand is the immobility of resources. This kind of planning relies on inducement to bring about a supply large enough to meet market demand. Suppose, for example, that it is desired to increase the consumption of milk and that the method chosen is to distribute free milk in schools. The total demand for milk is thus increased, and its price tends to rise. If a small rise in price is sufficient to induce a large flow of resources into milk production, supply will keep pace with demand, and no further action will be required. But if it is not, there will be either a large increase in the price of milk, or a shortage for ordinary consumers, and in either of these cases further action will be demanded, either to keep the price at a reasonable level, or to allocate the limited supplies fairly, or both.

Since, therefore, the real cause of the trouble is the immobility of resources, it follows that the most important measures to be adopted are those which augment the supply. Price control and rationing may also be necessary, but since they are only necessary until such time as the supply can be augmented, they are subsidiary to measures that augment supply, and the efficiency of planning is to be judged not by the excellence of the system of rationing and price controls, but by the speed with which shortages are eliminated and price controls and rationing rendered unnecessary.

This is one of the weakest spots in contemporary planning. Governments are usually so fully occupied in enforcing measures to ensure fair distribution of commodities in short supply that they forget the prior importance of taking steps to eliminate the shortage. Their error, however, is no greater than that of the anti-planners, whose arguments always tacitly assume away the immobility of resources. In their system the market itself will equilibrate demand and supply overnight, so that interference with prices is bound to be mischievous. But the truth is that while as a general principle it is best to operate through the market, temporary shortages will always emerge, and they may demand drastic measures of two kinds—measures to spread supplies equitably, and measures to augment supplies.

#### PRICE CONTROL

The first distinction which has to be made is between general shortages and particular shortages. A general shortage of goods in an economy is a monetary phenomenon, due to monetary inflation, and the appropriate remedy for it is not general price controls but disinflation. As we shall see in Chapter III, inflation damages an economy in so many ways that the proper way to deal with it is not to try to treat its symptoms, with such measures as price controls, but to eliminate the root cause. In wartime disinflation is difficult because the government is not able to control its budget; but in peacetime it can control its budget, and through its budget the total flow of money, and this is much easier to do than it is effectively to operate general price controls, with rationing, and without black markets. Price control is defensible only when it is particular, and not when it is general.

A particular shortage is distinguished from general shortage by the shortage in one part of the economy being balanced by over-abundance elsewhere. The particular shortage causes prices to rise; suppliers receive an abnormal amount of money, and make abnormal profits. This extra money, if the total quantity of money is just right, must come from other parts of the economy, where suppliers must be suffering abnormal losses. Unless the shortage in some parts is balanced by over abundance in others, the shortage is not particular but general, and the remedy is not price control but disinflation.

If the shortage is particular, and the commodity is essential, then its price may have to be controlled. If the commodity is not essential, there is no need to control its price; the high price will encourage consumers to economise on it, which they can do easily because it is not essential, and which is what they ought to do. If it is an essential consumer good its price must be controlled, otherwise the poor will suffer hardship. Of course when we eliminate poverty by distributive measures ensuring a just distribution of income this argument will lose its force; but, in the meantime, essential consumer goods in short supply must be price controlled. If the commodity is an essential raw material or producer goods its price must again be controlled, lest it enter into other prices at all stages of the economy with a snowball effect. This argument, too, is easily overdone. If money is firmly in control the rise of some prices should not be able to promote a general rise in the price level, for the abnormal flow of money in one direction will be balanced by abnormal losses and downward pressure on prices elsewhere.

Effective price control depends on quality control. Price control cannot work at all unless the article or service whose price is being controlled can be described in exact specifications, otherwise suppliers effectively escape control by reducing quality. To lay down specifications is most difficult where the commodity is a service, such as restaurant service or retailing, but it is also difficult wherever the commodity varies widely in quality. Control then demands specifying a standard article (e.g. 'utility') or service (e.g. standard meal), and compelling suppliers to supply this exclusively or in the main. This is seldom wholly satisfactory, and cannot in any case be done if no suitable standards can be framed.

Finally, price control leaves demand in excess of supply, so there will be shortages, queues and black markets unless demand is cut down to the level of supply. This can be done by taxation or by rationing. Rationing may take many forms. Each person may be given a definite weekly quota, as of sugar. Or the commodity may be put 'on points' with other scarce commodities, and each person may be given a quota of points to allocate between these commodities as he chooses. Or the ration may be varied in quantity according to each individual

case, as is done with petrol or raw materials, where priorities are established. Rationing is easier to administer if it is fair to give everyone an equal share than it is where priorities have to be established and each case considered separately, and in the latter event the administrative task may be most burdensome and costly. All this is avoided if the demand is reduced to the level of supply simply by placing a tax on the commodity. This is the best way to ration commodities that are not very essential, and it can also be applied to essential commodities if part of the proceeds of the tax is paid out to deserving classes who would otherwise be unfairly deprived of their share of the commodity by the imposition of the tax—this can be done easily if the classes are recognisable, by increasing allowances such as pensions, children's allowances or social insurance benefits, by appropriate adjustments of taxation, or by subsidy. The choice between administrative rationing and taxation must be made in each case on its particular merits, but there is no doubt that some form of rationing should almost always accompany price control.

So much for price control and demand. At the same time price control has also important effects on supply, which are often neglected, but which make it a dangerous instrument to use. For example, the state may wish the poor to be able to get bread at a price much below its cost of production. If it then fixes the price of bread at this low level, and does nothing else, the consequence is that the producers of bread turn to something else, and the supply of bread is reduced. Similarly, rent control is making it so unprofitable to keep working class houses in a state of repair at the high level of building costs that exists today, that many landlords are abandoning their property, and the supply of well-maintained houses available to the poor is thus contracted. Whenever a price is fixed below the market rate, the supply is thereby curtailed, and if the state does not desire the supply to be curtailed it has the obligation to accompany price control with offsetting measures restoring and increasing the inducement to supply. Price control of bread must be accompanied and offset by a subsidy to wheat. Rent control has had to be offset by subsidies to new building, and is proving harmful without subsidies toward repairs.



There is here an important distinction between controlling inducements to a whole class of persons, and controlling inducements only to some of the opportunities open to that class. If entrepreneurs as a class have their incomes halved, whatever their enterprise, the supply of entrepreneurship may diminish much or little, or may even increase; we cannot be sure. But if entrepreneurship is penalised in the bread industry but not elsewhere, or in the letting of houses but not elsewhere we can be quite certain what will happen; entrepreneurs will move from penalised into unpenalised industries and supplies in the former will contract. Thus must we distinguish between general controls and particular controls; the latter are far more dangerous than the former. Since the state is usually tempted to control essentials and to leave inessentials uncontrolled, the result of state control is frequently to reduce the supply of essentials and to expand the inessential. The way out is to make certain that any control which diminishes inducement is paralleled and offset by other action designed to maintain the inducement to supply.

Price control is thus a delicate instrument, easily misused; and when misused it frustrates the objectives of planning by diminishing instead of increasing the supplies of essential commodities, and by causing what is available to be badly distributed and therefore wasted. Price control should seldom be used alone; it should almost always be accompanied by rationing and by measures to augment supplies as speedily as possible, and because the enforcement of all this is cumbersome, price control should be used reluctantly and abandoned as soon as is feasible. Alas, price control is the most popular weapon of states, the most misused, and the one whose misuse has done most to bring planning into disrepute.

Governments who play with price control, without having the determination to do all that is needed for its successful use, get their economies into a mess. Inducements are distorted, and resources tend to flow to the inessential industries which are uncontrolled. Then we are treated to a spectacle that can only be called planning by exhortation. 'Targets' are published for essential industries, and Ministers make speeches urging capitalists and workers to move in the right directions. These speeches and targets, as extensive British experience in the

last three years has proved, are almost wholly useless. One can plan by direction alone, or by inducement alone, but one cannot plan by exhortation alone, when the major result of one's actions is to make the inducements work in the opposite direction. Nearly all the planning done in this country in the last three years, with its apparatus of targets and speeches, has been of this character, and that is why all the targets have been unfulfilled, and why the very word 'target' has become a laughing stock. This is not planning, but merely pretending to plan. Planning is a serious business; what makes planning is not the targets, which merely express what we would like to see happen, but the action that is taken to achieve these targets. And the major source of error has been the use of price controls without the offsetting measures for inducement, which (with machinery for allocation and for enforcement) should always accompany price control.

#### MOBILITY

The most important thing to do to a shortage is to eliminate it. This is not the only thing to do. In the interim prices may have to be controlled, specifications issued, and supplies rationed. But all these are necessary only for so long as the shortage lasts, and are subsidiary to eliminating the shortage by augmenting supply. The quality and success of planning are to be measured not by the excellence of price and rationing controls, but by the speed with which shortages are eliminated, and by the effectiveness of the measures taken towards that end.

If the quantity of money is right there cannot be a general shortage of goods, and particular shortages must be balanced by the existence of surplus supplies of other goods. The existence of shortages is then a clear sign that productive resources are in the wrong places, and what we have to do is to get them correctly allocated between industries.

This is no easy job, as we shall see in Chapter VI. The best way to tackle it is by inducement; i.e. by raising the earnings in industries that are short of resources relatively to earnings in other industries. But inducement may work only over a long period, and only by means of sharp fluctuations in

earnings—a sharp rise followed by a fall to normal levels, for example. Sometimes there are acceptable forms of direction which can be applied to end the shortage, e.g. by controlling raw materials, labour recruitment, or capital installations in ways that restrict less essential industries; but, especially where the maldistribution of labour is the principal problem, at other times we can rely only on the slow working of inducement, and then the shortage and the controls it makes necessary will last for some time.

It is here that planning by direction and planning by inducement meet. In a normally working economic system the state should be able to do nearly all the planning it wants by manipulating the market, and especially through the budget, which is the principal instrument of planning. Through the budget the state fixes the quantity of money in circulation, and thus determines whether there shall be inflation, deflation or the right balance. Through the budget it redistributes income, decides how much equality there shall be, and thus controls demand and supply and production. These general controls it supplements, again through the budget, by stimulating or retarding particular industries and services, either by buying itself, or by taxes and subsidies. The budget is not the only instrument available for planning, but it is the most important, the most powerful, and the most embracing. Perhaps in some other countries where the machinery for assessing and collecting taxes is very inadequate, and where corruption is rife in the Treasury, the budget is not powerful enough for planning. But in such countries the whole administrative machine is likely to be unsuitable for planning, and other weapons of planning fare no better than the budget. In Britain, however, it is not only the case that the arts of public finance are highly developed. But it is also important that while the citizen of Britain responds fairly well to fiscal demands, he hates other forms of control that involve direction, rationing or other dependence on administrative decision; and this is added reason for planning through the budget as much as possible, and relegating other forms of control to a subsidiary position.

But this kind of planning takes us as far as inducement will take us and no further. If there are big changes in demand or supply, and if resources are not mobile, it will have to be

supplemented by direction. At the outbreak of a war, and at the end of a war, an economic system is not working normally. The movements required are large, and a whole network of controls is needed to cope with them. Similarly, a big change in the foreign trade position of a country calls for shifts of resources which cannot be accomplished rapidly, and which necessarily subject an economy for a long period to widespread controls. As conditions become normal it should be possible to dispense with such controls; if the opportunity has really been taken to spread resources correctly between industries the shortages should disappear. If conditions were to become stationary, all physical and price controls should disappear, and the budget remain the single instrument of planning. But of course conditions do not become stationary, and it is not desirable that they should. In normal conditions the budget will be the principal instrument of planning, but because of immobilities it will have to be supplemented by controls in all those parts of the economy where there is marked disequilibrium between demand and supply. The issue is not whether to plan or not to plan. It is simply how far planning can be done through the budget, and how much extra control we must have. This will be elaborated further in the chapters that follow.

#### CONCLUSION

It may be useful to summarise the conclusions of this chapter.

- (1) The issue between planning and *laissez-faire* is whether we can use the visible controls of state action to improve on the invisible social controls exercised by the market.
- (2) This is an issue that must be argued; there is no *a priori* case for using the state in place of other social institutions that serve the same purpose.
- (3) The argument produces a formidable list of defects in the market, which state action is required to eliminate.
- (4) The state can use different forms of planning to achieve the same purposes; planning by direction is much inferior to planning by inducement.
- (5) In planning by inducement the state manipulates the market to secure its objectives.

(6) Manipulating demand is not enough because resources move too slowly in response to inducements. Other controls are also needed temporarily.

(7) Price control and rationing are frequently necessary in the interest of equity, but they do not solve the fundamental problem, which is to get productive resources correctly allocated.

(8) The principal objective of planning by direction should be to overcome immobilities, and the speed with which this is achieved is the true measure of the quality of planning.

(9) The main instrument of planning is the budget, but this may need to be supplemented by planning by direction wherever there is marked disequilibrium between demand and supply.

## II

### *Fair Shares for All*

THE first aim of socialists, prized above all others, is equality of income. Equality is desired for its own sake, in terms of moral justice, and it is desired also because the surplus of production should be used not to provide luxuries for a few but to abolish poverty, with its evil consequences of ill health, squalor, ignorance, ugliness and the waste of hundreds of millions of human lives. Fortunately, men have ceased, at least in this country, to dispute that it is the duty of the state to even up the distribution of income; the questions left are only how much and how.

Here there are two quite separate issues, relating to income derived from personal effort, and income derived from property.

Very few people believe that there should be complete equality of income irrespective of work done. A society that did not reward hard work more than slothfulness and skill more than incapacity would soon be reduced to dire poverty. There have been many communist experiments in the world's history, but they have never prospered, either in wealth or in numbers, and have not lasted long. The need for differentials is universally accepted; what is argued is that the current range is much too wide. No man is worth £10,000 a year, and, in our present state of poverty, with the great majority of the people earning less than £6 a week, only a few very exceptional men deserve to exceed £2,000 a year.

Income from personal effort is however a secondary issue, for it is income from property that accounts for the great inequality of incomes, both directly, because the income from property is very unequally distributed, and indirectly because part of the inequality of earnings from personal effort is due to the inequality of property incomes. If this source of inequality were abolished very few people would complain of the inequality of incomes from effort that remained. The fundamental

socialist attack is thus an attack upon property, and demands either an egalitarian distribution of property or the abolition of private income from property.

All modern governments are egalitarian and seek to eliminate extremes of income. This can be done in two ways. The first is to redistribute income through taxation, and the second is so to alter the basic factors determining the distribution of income that the distribution of income before taxation becomes more equal. The method most used is the first; all modern governments effect some redistribution of income through taxation. In fact, it is arguable that some of them, especially the U.K. government, have pushed this method as far as it can go, if not indeed too far. The second method, which involves altering the distribution of property ownership and the whole class basis of society, is also used to some extent by modern governments, but only to a small extent, and it is here that the greatest changes are likely in the future.

#### REDISTRIBUTING INCOME

Redistribution proceeds by levying on the incomes of the rich, and using the levies to add to the incomes of the poor.

The now traditional British method is to put a floor to poverty by providing the working classes with a number of free or cheap services, notably medical service, education, social insurance, cheap housing, and, in very recent times, cheap food. The alternative, before 1939, was to pay out to the working class weekly cash benefits equivalent in amount, which they could use as they desired, e.g. by spending more on trips to the seaside if they preferred this to cheap housing. Since 1939 taxation imposed on the working classes has so greatly increased that the alternative is rather simply to reduce *pari passu* working class taxation and the service made available. The argument for the alternative is that it does away with the bother and expense of collecting working class taxation, and at the same time gives the worker greater choice and the right to take his benefits as he pleases. The only valid objection to this is the belief that the government knows better than the working classes do how they should spend their money. Thus the working classes are made to have education whether they

want it or not, and medical services, and social insurance. Here, as in so much else, there is both truth and untruth, and the line is difficult to draw. If the government simultaneously abolished housing subsidies and cut working class taxation by an amount exactly equal to the subsidies the working classes would be no worse off financially; but they would then without any doubt prefer to spend the money in other ways than on housing, and would live in overcrowded and inadequately provided houses, some because they do not know the advantages of better housing, and others because they value these advantages too lightly in comparison with other ways of spending their money. That is the case, and the only case for housing subsidies, and it is put here in its crudest form because the matter is so often discussed in left-wing literature without facing reality.

Working class taxation is now so heavy, its evil effect on incentives is so considerable, and the cost of collecting taxes is so burdensome (the Inland Revenue handles nearly twenty million assessments every year) that we ought not to keep on the budget anything which strictly involves no more than collecting taxes with one hand in order to pay them out to the same people with another. If the budget is to be used for redistribution of income, the way to do this in future is not to increase the payments to the working classes, but to reduce the taxes that they pay. We can do all the redistribution that we want to do simply by adjusting the structure of taxation, and so long as the working classes are paying any taxes at all, we should never defend any government service on the ground that it is a means of redistribution. Thus, for example, the food subsidies cannot be defended on this ground, for if we were simultaneously to abolish these subsidies and to cut working class taxation by an equivalent amount the working classes would as a whole be no worse off, and we should be saving the bother of collecting and paying out, and be having the stimulating advantages of lower taxation on incentives. (The real case for some food subsidisation is bound up with the case for wage and price stabilisation with which we deal in subsequent chapters.) But, of course, when we have said all this, there remains a substantial core of social services to be financed. What socialists have wanted is to establish a society



in which every child shall grow up in pleasant homes and attractive surroundings, and with good educational opportunities; in which every adult shall be provided for in sickness and adversity; and in which the pensioner can take untroubled ease. This provides a vast sphere for government activity, however it may be financed.

The provision of such services is one plank in the floor that is put to incomes. The second plank is the enforcement of minimum wages.

Controlling the general level of wages does not have much effect on the distribution of income, except for that part of the economy that depends on foreign trade. The reason for this is that there appears, in a free and closed economy, to be a pretty steady relation between wages and prices, so that if the general level of wages rises or falls, the general level of prices rises or falls *pari passu*, and the working classes are neither better off nor worse off. We do not know why this is so, but the evidence is pretty clear, over the past century, that this is what happens.

The consequence is that working class conditions can be improved by raising the general level of wages only if at the same time rigid price controls are imposed to prevent prices from rising also. This can be done, to a small extent, with general benefit to the community, in so far as pressure on profit margins stimulates entrepreneurial efficiency, or in so far as workers produce more as wages rise. But neither of these permits this kind of adjustment to be taken very far, and if wages are raised considerably prices cannot be held down without unfortunate consequences that could be avoided if the same objective were reached—as it can be—through redistributive taxation. These consequences are, first, that it is difficult and costly, in terms of administration, to administer general price controls. Secondly, that if wages are raised all round while prices are controlled there will be serious distortion. This is because wages do not enter into the prices of all commodities in the same proportion. When, therefore, wages increase in all industries in the same proportion some industries become very much more unprofitable than others and entrepreneurs are induced to move from the less profitable to the more profitable irrespective of the social value of the industries. And, thirdly,

a general increase in wages relatively to prices is bound to affect employment adversely. This is partly because some firms will go bankrupt and also because it becomes more profitable to use machinery, the price of which has risen less than wages, in place of labour. More employment is provided in the engineering trades but in all other industries workers are dismissed. It is unnecessary to launch the economy upon this distortion in order to alter the distribution of income in favour of the workers. Redistribution through taxation is much easier and more sensible.

These strictures apply only to a general increase of wages, and not to the fixing of minimum wages in depressed trades. Outside the skilled trades and the professions there are great pools of labour whose supply price is very low, and much exploitation would occur but for the work that is done by trade boards and other wage fixing machinery. This is a case for raising not the general level but the level of wages in the lowest grades relatively to the level of wages in the highest grades. This also may cause some unemployment, in so far as it does not increase efficiency, but what it does mainly is to improve the bargaining power of the weakest sections of the community at the expense of the stronger and this is very much to be desired.

Next we turn from the floor that is put to low incomes to the ceiling that is put on high incomes. The most important aspect of this is the heavy taxes imposed on the highest incomes, but more recently the rich have also had their consumption controlled by rationing.

There is a certain seductive attraction in securing fair shares for all simply by rationing out commodities, thus rendering differences of money income ineffective. But this attraction is no safer than is the fascination exerted by equal money incomes. If we are all reduced to the same level by general rationing, incentives are destroyed just as rapidly as if we are all reduced to the same level of money incomes.

In addition rationing is inferior to progressive taxation for three reasons. First, it is difficult to enforce administratively without black markets, and the wider the range of commodities included in it the greater is the difficulty and the likelier the breakdown. Secondly, if rationing is confined to essential

commodities, the money which is not permitted to flow towards these commodities flows towards inessential commodities whose production becomes more profitable, and the supply of essential commodities is reduced in favour of inessentials. And, thirdly, rationing interferes with the free choice not only of the rich but also of the poor, who get fuller satisfaction from their incomes if they are allowed to choose their own combination of commodities. Rationing is useful and necessary for dealing with shortages of particular essential commodities in the interval while efforts are made to augment supplies; but as a universal or permanent way of equalisation it is inferior to taxation.

The simplest way to get a greater equality of income is to put heavy taxes on the rich and light taxes or no taxes on the poor. This has been the basis of British fiscal policy for many decades and each generation has tightened the screw. How far we have gone in this direction is not generally recognised or admitted on the left. No doubt we can and should go further, but we have indeed already gone so far that many question whether the limits of this policy have not already been reached.

The problem that high taxation poses is its effect on incentives. In the days when the standard rate of income tax was sixpence in the pound this could be neglected. But when the standard rate is nine shillings in the pound and surtax on higher incomes brings marginal rates up to 19s. 6d. in the pound the effects of high taxation on incentives have to be taken into account. Actually, the major error in this field is not the amount of taxation but the structure of the income tax. A man who pays nine shillings in the pound is not in fact paying 45 per cent of his income to the Inland Revenue; allowances may be reducing the average rate that he pays to something like 20 per cent. What affects incentive, however, is not the average rate but the marginal rate, and the sensible thing to do is so to reconstruct the basis of taxation that the marginal rate is no longer in excess of the average rate. This would make the standard rate of income tax very much below what it is today—probably less than half of what it is today—and permit higher taxation to be levied in the upper ranges with smaller disincentive effects than there are at present. Several schemes have been suggested with this effect. For example allowances might be taken out of the assessment. Every person who earns an income

could be entitled to draw a marriage allowance and an allowance for each child in cash from the post office in extension of the present system of family allowances; a low standard rate of say 2s. 6d. in the pound could then be levied on all income received up to say £500 a year, and beyond this point additional flat rates could be imposed. Such a reform would also greatly reduce the administrative cost and the inconvenience of the present system. If only for the sake of administrative simplification it ought to be adopted; but in addition some such reform must be adopted if further redistribution of income through taxation is to be possible without killing the goose that lays the golden egg.

#### EQUALITY OF OPPORTUNITY

Nevertheless whatever reforms may be made in the system of taxation, the danger to incentives remains a severe limit on the possibility of redistributing income through taxation. It is therefore all the more important to take measures to increase equality of income before taxation.

The distribution of income before taxation is determined by two principal factors, the distribution of property and the distribution of skill.

It is the shortage of skills which explains the differences in remuneration for work. Doctors earn more than miners because in relation to the demand for doctors there is a much greater shortage of doctors than there is of miners. If every child in the community could become a doctor at no cost, doctors would not be as scarce as domestic servants, and would not earn much more. In order, therefore, to even out earnings from work before taxation, what we have to do is to increase equality of opportunity. The key to this is, of course, the educational system. All socialists aim at enabling all children to have whatever education their abilities fit them for without reference to the incomes of their parents, and if this state of affairs can really be achieved, differences between the incomes of different professions will be very greatly reduced. But there are also other hindrances to equality of opportunity inherent in a class society, particularly in commerce and industry where the opportunities of securing the more highly remunerated posts tend to be

reserved for a narrow circle. One of the objectives of a socialistic industrial policy must be to make it possible for all those engaged in industry at any level to have the same opportunities of reaching the top, with no other restraint than their ability and fitness for the job. Equality of opportunity is the key to greater equality of income and to the classless society.

Some part of the inequality of opportunity, and the major part of the inequality of income is due to the unequal distribution of property. Property owners, it is estimated, receive about thirty per cent of the national income in payment for the use of their property, and since about two-thirds of the property in the country is owned by only two per cent of the population this gives at once two per cent of the population some twenty per cent of the national income. There is no solution to this problem other than confiscation. The nationalisation of property is no solution because the property owners are compensated in full and after the transaction is completed they are as wealthy as before nationalisation.

This is not to say that the payment of compensation when property is nationalised is a mistake. On the contrary it is the only feasible solution without bloody revolution. After a bloody revolution it is possible for the state to confiscate all property; but revolutions dissolve the entire fabric of society and are shunned by most political thinkers not because they do not desire confiscation, and not because they do not think that it is a good thing for the heads of some of the mighty to roll in the dust (which we are told on good authority is pleasing to the Almighty), but because when the fabric of society begins to dissolve no one can predict the consequences or control the ultimate result. No revolution in history has ever achieved precisely what it set out to achieve and the results of many revolutions have been exactly the opposite of what was so intended. It is better, as Charles Lamb taught, to roast a pig over a fire than to burn down a house for the purpose.

Confiscation is achieved by levying taxes on property in a more gradual fashion than revolution implies. The most popular of these taxes are those which fall at death and which, therefore, allow the property owner to enjoy the fruits of his property so long as he is alive. Death duties are doubly popular because they affect incentive less than taxes which reduce income during

life time, and also because they strike at the inheritance of wealth which is itself inconsistent with equalitarian principles. An alternative to death duties which is much canvassed but is not much applied is to impose high duties, not on the amount of property passing at death, but on the amount of property inherited. If, for example, a prohibitive tax were put on the inheritance of any amount larger than say five thousand pounds the testator could prevent much of his property from passing into the hands of the tax-gatherer by distributing it in small amounts to a large number of people instead of trying to keep it intact for a small number of people. A wide distribution of property would thus be encouraged, and a much wider distribution of income would automatically follow.

A capital levy is more painful, and also presents more technical difficulties. If it is to be administered fairly it cannot be introduced suddenly because much time has to be spent on making fair assessments. This is the chief reason why it has not yet been adopted in Great Britain; the capital levy is always advocated at the heat of some crisis as if it were a solution for some immediate difficulty, and when it is realised that the machinery for administering it would take a long time to establish, interest in the levy always flags. A recurring capital levy would discourage saving and encourage capital consumption if it were levied on classes whose capital is so small that they have a real choice between consuming it and preserving it. If it were levied only on persons owning more than say £5,000 or £10,000 of capital (the average amount of capital per family is about £5,000) it would have very little effect on incentives or on saving; and if the government agreed to receive payments in kind or in securities, and used the proceeds to pay off the national debt, its disturbing effects on property values would be small.

It is quite clear that we must make much more rapid progress with the redistribution of property in the future than we have done in the past. So long as property is so unequally distributed all social problems are made much more difficult to solve. It is not merely that there are indefensible extremes of riches and poverty, with the ever present threat of revolution promoted either from within or from without. It is also that judgment on all other issues is distorted. We are unable to think straight on

nationalisation because the majority of persons think of it (wrongly) as a means towards equality, instead of considering reasonably the pros and cons of public operation of industry. Workers will not abandon restrictive practices and release their energies for production and the abolition of poverty because they fear that their efforts will merely make the rich richer. The budget is strained and taxation raised to levels dangerous to incentives. And so on. If we lived in a community in which such property as was not owned by the state (and it is not desirable for the state to own all property) was widely distributed among the people, we should attain both a standard of living and a degree of social harmony and happiness that are now beyond conception. Much of the energy which statesmen, clergymen and philosophers devote to preaching to us the virtues of social peace and brotherhood, and the dangers of envy and of industrial and political strife would be much better devoted to drafting and enforcing a law for the confiscation and redistribution of property by means of a capital levy.

#### CONCLUSION

This chapter may be summarised in the following statements.

- (1) The case for the provision of free or cheap services by the state rests not on income distribution but on the superior insight of the government, and is limited to those services whose extended use it is particularly desired to encourage.
- (2) General wage control is an ineffective means of redistribution of income unless it is accompanied by general price control, and this has undesirable effects; but the enforcement of minimum wages in particular industries is necessary for the protection of depressed groups.
- (3) General rationing is difficult to administer and a cumbersome way of achieving equality.
- (4) The best way to redistribute income is to impose low taxes on the poor and high taxes on the rich. Reform of the income tax system is necessary in order to pursue this policy more effectively, but in any case it has already been used so fully in the U.K. that greater emphasis must in future rest on altering the distribution of income before taxation.

(5) Inequality of income before taxation is partly due to inequality of opportunity in education and employment, which the state can help to reduce.

(6) It is also due to the unequal distribution of property which can be changed by death duties and capital levies.



### III

## *Money*

THE circulation of money determines the level of prices and of employment in a country, and fluctuations in the level of monetary circulation determine whether that country shall suffer inflation or deflation. These issues are too important to be left to the control of private enterprise; that has long been agreed, and in every modern country the government itself controls the supply of money and seeks to influence the demand. Modern progress in monetary control involves not new objectives, but simply new techniques.

#### INFLATION

All modern economists agree what the objective of monetary policy should be; it is to stabilise the flow of money at the level just appropriate to full employment, so that there shall be neither inflation nor deflation. Unfortunately this objective is not accepted unanimously by the politicians of the left or of the right. Many on the right would prefer a regular cycle of inflation and deflation, and many on the left hanker after continuous inflation.

The right would like a cycle of inflation and deflation because it thinks that deflation from time to time is necessary to keep the workers disciplined and to induce them to work hard. It may be true that the employing classes can continue to treat their workers as they treat them now only if the fear of unemployment can be hung over their heads at regular intervals. But to socialists this is a case not for deflation but for altering the existing relations between employer and employed. Discipline must find a new basis in the consent of worker and manager to work together for common ends; of this more will be said in Chapter VII. And as for working hard, if it is true that the worker, if relieved of the pressure of fear, would prefer to work

less, or less intensively, then he should have the right to do so. His standard of living will be lower, and so will that of the country as a whole, but is it not a democratic right to decide whether extra income is worth the extra wear and tear of work ?

More dangerous is the demand of the left for continuous inflation. This, too, is rooted in the class struggle, for it is thought that if there are always more jobs than men, employers will be at the mercy of their workers. This also is true; but the left-wing politicians who accept it as a decisive case in favour of continuous inflation do so only because they are unaware of the harm which inflation does to the working classes no less than to the rest of the community.

That open inflation is harmful is seldom disputed. In open inflation prices always rise faster than wages; the workers and the middle classes suffer, while employers and property owners gain. The worst losers are the middle classes, whose salaries adjust too slowly, and whose past savings lose value, but the working classes also fail to keep up with rising prices. The left is therefore pretty firmly opposed in these days to open inflation; what attracts some of its members is suppressed inflation, in which the tide of money is allowed to flow, but is prevented from raising prices by administrative controls. Suppressed inflation is less obviously harmful than open inflation, but it too has evil consequences.

First, even if prices are controlled, inflation causes profits to rise more than wages and salaries. Inflation is a condition in which people are spending on consumer goods more than those goods have cost to produce; every extra penny of this spending, if it does not eat into stocks or upset the foreign balance, must go into profits, since this is the only residual element in income. This is why, for example, profits in Britain have increased more than wages and salaries in the last three years. The fact that this has been happening has in turn set up new pressures, demands for higher wages, and for tighter price controls; but the simplest way to check the movement, and to keep profits low, would be to check the inflation.

Secondly, suppressed inflation causes resources to be sucked away from essential industries, which are tightly controlled, to inessential industries, which are left more free, and which

therefore become more profitable. Frantic efforts have then to be made to tighten up raw material allocations, but the greater the inflation the more difficult it is effectively to work such controls. Power has also to be taken to direct labour, in order to discourage it from flowing to the inessential trades. All this could be avoided by ending the inflation.

Thirdly, the inflation reduces productivity. Stocks of raw materials and work in progress are run down, and the smooth flow of production is impeded. Profits are so easy that employers become careless of costs. The competitive forces cease to work, and the stimulus to efficiency is removed.

And, fourthly, inflation brings external bankruptcy. Some of the extra money is spent on buying imports, and some is spent on attracting to the home market resources that should be working for export. The balance of payments thus becomes adverse, gold and foreign reserves are used up, and eventually unless foreign countries are willing to make loans, the external value of the currency falls.

In a mild inflation the government may strive to prevent all these consequences by using administrative controls and planning by direction. But the bigger the inflation the more difficult it is to operate such controls effectively. Administrative controls are not and cannot be an efficient substitute for controlling the level of monetary circulation. The task of such controls, on the contrary, is made all the more difficult by inflation. This is the plain lesson not only for our own experience in the last three years, but also of Soviet Russia in the nineteen thirties. Many of the most difficult and tiresome problems which that country had to face in the 'thirties were due neither to the adoption of planning nor to any national instinct for authoritarianism, but simply to having to maintain a continuous struggle with an overflowing tide of money. Inflation is as great a nuisance to those who try to plan by direction as it is to those who plan by inducement.

#### MONETARY STABILITY

The right policy is to have neither too much money, nor too little money, but just the right amount, and the right amount is that which is appropriate to full employment, with no tendency either to inflation or to deflation.

The old techniques for achieving this laid greater emphasis on controlling the quantity of money in existence than on controlling the demand for money. The quantity of money in existence is important, but fluctuations in trade are caused as much by fluctuations in the use of money as by fluctuations in the quantity of money, and indeed normally the latter adjusts itself to the former. The runaway inflations are caused usually by the quantity of money being increased in response to government demand, and the big deflations also see the quantity of money being reduced simply because the demand for money is reduced. Firm control of the quantity of money can prevent a runaway inflation, and a severe cut in the quantity of money is also very useful when there is too much money about (as recently in Germany or the U.S.S.R.). But controlling the quantity of money in existence cannot prevent the smaller inflations and deflations that characterise the trade cycle, because they depend as much on changes in the velocity of circulation of money as they do on changes in the quantity of money. The new technique rejects the objective of stabilising the quantity of money in existence; instead, when the demand for money is increasing, it increases the quantity of money, and when the demand is diminishing it diminishes the quantity of money, so keeping the circulation of money constant.

The instrument of this control is the budget. When the circulation of money is flagging, it can be stimulated by reducing taxation and leaving the public with more in its pocket to spend. And when the circulation is excessive it increases taxation, thus reducing the amount that the public can spend. The corollary of this is the possibility of budget deficits and surpluses. These may offset each other in the long run or they may not; this does not matter. If, for example, there were a chronic tendency for the circulation of money to fall short, there would have to be a succession of budget deficits, and provided that these were no bigger than was needed to stabilise demand, they would do no harm. A deficit is harmful only when it is greater than can be justified by the gap in the circulation of money, or when, being of the right size for this purpose, the government borrows and pays interest on it, instead of simply creating more money interest free.

At one stage in the evolution of this technique it was suggested

that the government should vary not the sum collected in taxes but its expenditure, spending more when the circulation of money is flagging, and less when it is excessive. Spending more is more effective than taxing less, in the sense that a given budget deficit will add more employment if it is reached by spending more than if it is reached by taxing less. But varying taxation is easier and more desirable than varying expenditure. Public works are needed even at the height of an inflation, and unnecessary public works do not become desirable just because there is a deflation. In so far as public works can be advanced or retarded without much inconvenience it is obviously sensible to use this as an additional means of stabilising demand; but the principal emphasis must be on varying the amount of taxation.

The use of this technique depends on forecasting the amount and distribution of the national income in the immediate future to which the budget relates. If there is much less than full employment, on the one hand, or raging inflation on the other, precise calculation is not necessary or possible. The Chancellor must aim at a pretty big deficit or surplus to get the circulation of money moving rapidly in the right direction, and it is only when full employment is reached, or disinflation achieved, that precise calculation becomes important.

At full employment the forecaster estimates how much resources, in money value, will be devoted to producing consumer goods for the home market, exports, investment goods, and government services. The total of these resources is also the total of the national income, because incomes come from production, and the total cost of production is simply the total sum of incomes paid out. The other side of the forecaster's balance sheet is an estimate of how people are likely to spend these incomes. If they will spend more on buying consumer goods than will be spent in producing consumer goods the prices of these goods will tend to rise, and inflation will be set in motion; if they will spend less, deflation will be set in motion. Full employment is maintained by keeping consumers' expenditure at the right level through making up any gap by having a budget deficit, and preventing any tendency to surplus by increasing the amount taken in taxes.

There must be no pretence either that this technique can be very precise, or that it can be fully effective.

Precision is prevented in the first place by slowness in adjusting taxation. Annual budgets announcing taxes that do not come into operation for some months are not good enough for a situation where, perhaps because of events abroad, there may be swift changes in the general level of activity. This, however, can be remedied; supplementary budgets can be made, and if the income tax structure is simplified, as was suggested in the preceding chapter, swift changes can be made in the standard rate.

The other obstacle to precision is the inadequacy of the statistics available to the forecaster. This also can be remedied. It is a curious fact that there is much more statistical information available about the American economy, the home of *laissez-faire*, than there is about the British. Our statistical staff needs to be strengthened, and its power to command necessary figures needs to be increased. Fortunately we need not depend exclusively on national income estimates for guidance as to the direction in which budgetary policy should move, for there are at least two other useful thermometers.

The first of these is statistics of bankruptcy. Since business managers are not infallible there are always some using resources wastefully, and if there were no bankruptcies this waste would continue. In full employment something like 2,500 companies should go into liquidation every year. If the actual number is much above this, taxes should be reduced; if it is much below this, inflation is proceeding.

A much more precise thermometer is the statistics of unemployment. Not all unemployment is due to monetary shortage. There is also a certain amount of 'frictional' unemployment due to the changes occurring in the economy every day, whether fluctuations in demand, or new techniques of production, or changes in the availability of raw materials, or seasonal changes, or others. In consequence there are always some people out of work, moving from job to job, and it is estimated that these account for between 2 per cent and 3 per cent of the occupied population. The size of this frictional unemployment depends primarily on how well the labour market is organised, and it is our duty to diminish it as much as possible so that people displaced from any cause can find other suitable work at once. We can also diminish this figure by pursuing an inflationary

policy, because if the quantity of money is large enough all employers will be short of labour, and the unemployed man need not look for the right job but can get some job immediately. But if we do this, not only do we have all the usual evils of inflation, but in the labour market also it becomes impossible to distinguish between jobs that are more important and those that are less essential. If the quantity of money is just right, when one employer discharges labour there will be another employer needing labour. It will take some time to effect the transfer, but it will be the right transfer; the worker will go not just to any job, but to the right job. But when money overflows all employers need labour, and this distinction disappears. There is no longer any means of ensuring that labour gets into the right job through inducement, and we have to resort to direction.

This is a hard and unpopular thought. Unemployment is such an evil that it is hard to reject any means that would abolish it completely. But some ways of achieving an end are better than others. The way to abolish the 3 per cent of frictional unemployment is to improve the organisation of the labour market. To abolish it by bringing down the evils of inflation and direction of labour is like cutting off an arm to save a finger.

The level of unemployment can therefore be used as a gauge for monetary policy. In the present state of the British labour market if unemployment is less than 2 per cent of the gainfully occupied population there is inflationary pressure, and if it is more than 3 per cent the monetary tap should be turned on. The more rapidly the structure of the labour market is improved, the sooner these crucial figures will be lowered, and the nearer we shall come to being able to claim that the tap should be on whenever there is any unemployment at all.

Another factor which makes it difficult to eliminate unemployment exclusively through monetary policy is dependence on external trade. If there is a slump abroad, and the demand for exports falls off, workers engaged in export industries will lose their jobs. At present many of these industries are highly localised, and there are not always enough other jobs in the locality to which the workers can be transferred. A slump abroad might thus push the unemployment figure rapidly up to 10 per cent or so, without the mere injection of money into the

system having much immediate effect. The remedy for this is to promote the mobility of resources, both human and material, and this is such a large subject that we reserve to it a whole chapter (Ch. VI). In a sense this sort of employment also is frictional, because it is due to the imperfection of the labour market; and in this sense the estimate of 3 per cent as the upper limit of frictional employment is too low. Foreign trade, however, is such a special problem that it is better to treat separately the unemployment that it may cause.

#### THE PRICE LEVEL

Once the objective of controlling the quantity of money in existence is abandoned, and in its stead the quantity of money is adjusted to the needs of trade, the general price level becomes dependent solely upon the level of wages. If trade unions raise wages prices will rise, and the quantity of money will have to be increased in order that this should not give rise to unemployment. When there is an absolute limit on the quantity of money, wages and prices are limited, since if they rise too high there is unemployment, and this pulls them down again. But the new technique abandons the price level to the discretion of the trade unions, and many people are convinced that the result will be that prices will move continuously upward.

Since it is undesirable for prices to rise continually, the corollary of this technique is that the trade unions should agree as nearly as possible to stabilise the general level of wages. It cannot be stabilised completely. The social interest demands that some wages be higher than others, and since, with changing conditions, there will always be some wages needing to move upwards in the scale, while downward adjustments are difficult to secure, the general trend must always be upwards. This is not new; the general trend has always been upwards, and if in the future the upward movement were confined to what is needed to adjust particular wages relatively to the average, the general level would seem almost stable, when compared with what has happened in the past.

Moreover, absolute stability is not required. Since productivity is constantly increasing, prices would fall constantly if wages were stable. Now a falling price level has the disadvantage



of raising continually the real burden of debt. If therefore wages rise as fast as productivity increases, prices will be stable, and it may even be desirable that they should rise a little faster than this, so that the debt burden may constantly be eased. If by adjusting the wages of particular workers from time to time the general level of wages were made to rise by between 3 per cent and 5 per cent per annum, we should get a price level that was just about right.

Such relative stability could not be achieved unless the cost of living ceased to be subject to cyclical fluctuation. The cost of living depends to a large extent on the cost of imports, which depends very largely on American prices. If we let import prices move freely with American prices, the cost of living will rise in the upswing, and wages will chase upwards; but in the downswing the trade unions will resist a fall in wages as the cost of living falls, and can resist successfully if we maintain full employment. So wages will always rise in the upswing without falling in the downswing, and British prices will soon be well out of line with prices abroad, and the real value of the pound will be continually depreciating. We can avoid this by stabilising import prices, either by destabilising the external value of the pound, or by subsidising imports in the upswing and taxing them in the downswing. In the past three years we have pursued the latter policy, somewhat half-heartedly; prices have been rising, but not as much as they would have risen in the absence of subsidies. The Chancellor of the Exchequer has now called on the workers to agree to wage stabilisation. But they cannot be expected to accept this for long unless he applies himself with much greater determination to stabilising the cost of living, as a *quid pro quo*. To this issue we shall return in the chapter on foreign trade.

The second condition for wage stability is that wage demands should cease to be made in a competitive spiral, with each union chasing the successes achieved by other unions. There would have to be a code of rules, to determine which wages should be above, at, or below the average, and unions would have to accept a ruling from a general body representing all the unions, which would determine which wage claims should be supported. More difficult still, the rank and file members of the unions would have to be convinced that this was desirable,

or the trade union movement would disintegrate through unofficial strikes, and wages and prices would rise rapidly.

Before any of this could be achieved, the workers would have to be won over to the view that raising the general level of wages is an inefficient way to try to redistribute income, and therefore that wage adjustment should be confined to setting particular wages into the right relation with the general level. This in turn will not be accepted unless the workers' attention is directed to alternative and more efficient means of procuring equality, and unless they are convinced that these means are being adequately operated.

There is little hope of these things happening in the near future. Left-wing propaganda has concentrated so long and so much on the wage struggle that it will take a long time for different views to prevail. It will not, perhaps, take as long as we think. The reception given to Sir Stafford Cripps' appeal for stabilising incomes shows that if the confidence of the working classes is won, and the issues explained, it is possible for cherished beliefs to be set aside, even if only temporarily and experimentally.

This is the biggest educational job that socialists have to do. Full employment and an uncontrolled level of wages are incompatible, and sooner or later one must give in to the other. Either the workers must understand this and agree to stabilisation, or harassed governments will be tempted either to answer further wage demands with some deflation, or to follow in the footsteps of Hitler and of Stalin in controlling wages from above. To reach agreement demands a revolution not only in left wing tactics, but also in the structure of the movement; but to fail to achieve agreement means, we can be sure, revolutions no more difficult, and very much less pleasant for the working classes.

#### CONCLUSION

These conclusions may be summarised as follows.

(1) The aim of monetary policy should be to have the right quantity of money in circulation, not too much and not too little. Less than full employment is an unnecessary evil; and so is inflation, whether open or suppressed by price controls.

(2) The best technique is to offset tendencies to fluctuation by adjusting the level of taxation; this may also be supplemented by timing some public works appropriately.

(3) Estimates of profits, records of bankruptcies and the unemployment percentage are the thermometers of monetary policy.

(4) The wage level should be kept relatively stable; and the structure of trade union bargaining should be adapted to this purpose.

## IV

# *Investment*

THE principal urge towards planning in modern states is the desire to achieve a much higher level of investment than is likely in an unplanned society. This is often confused with planning for stability but has nothing to do with it. In early formulations of the Keynesian doctrines it was thought to be necessary to plan investment not to keep it high, but to keep it steady, because it was believed that income and employment are a direct function of investment. This is true, or true for all practical purposes, if investment is defined to include everything except consumption, as Keynesians do define it, but not if investment is meant in the narrower and everyday sense. Income and employment can be kept steady through stimulating or restricting consumption by means of budgetary deficits and surpluses, and the maintenance of full employment does not itself demand any control over investment. The reason governments plan investment, in Russia or Eastern Europe, or in the U.K., is to get a higher level of investment than would occur if investment depended solely on the voluntary savings of the public.

Investment must be matched by savings, either voluntary domestic savings, or foreign savings, or inflationary savings, or government savings. In the past the first three have been responsible for nearly all the investment that has occurred; domestic savings have seldom been sufficient, except in the richest countries, to finance the whole of domestic investment, and even they, e.g. both the U.K. and the U.S.A., were borrowers in their early days. Nowadays foreign borrowing is unpopular, mainly through fear of foreign control; the weaker countries shun it, and it is the stronger countries that resort to financing domestic investment by foreign borrowing, as we have been doing so largely in the U.K. in the past three years. Inflation (forced savings) has tended to take the place of foreign

borrowing, particularly in the U.S.S.R. in the early 'thirties, and in most of Europe today. But inflation has serious evils, as we have seen in the preceding chapter. If foreign borrowing is shunned and domestic savings are insufficient, we must fall back on a large budget surplus.

Voluntary domestic savings are always insufficient in a country which seeks to achieve rapid progress, and are all the more insufficient the more there is planned equality. Since the rich save more than the poor, countries in which the national income is very unequally distributed save much more than similar countries in which there is more equality. Accordingly, the more successful are plans for equality, the more necessary become plans for investment. The planning of investment is the corollary of the planning of equality.

The alternative is to be content with a very low rate of progress. For example, in Great Britain in 1947 gross investment was about 21 per cent of national income, but 7 per cent of national income was borrowed abroad, so domestic saving was only 14 per cent; this, also, was inflated—had there been no inflation in 1947 domestic saving might only have been 12 per cent. Now it is estimated that merely to replace existing capital as it wears out requires about 10 per cent of national income. So, in the absence of inflation and foreign borrowing, net new investment in 1947 would probably not have been more than about 2 per cent of gross national income.

If net investment were kept at this level, the British standard of living would increase only very slowly, and the prospect of being able to abolish poverty and to give to everyone a reasonable standard of material enjoyment would recede into the distance. Other countries would soon surpass this country, for in other countries investment is proceeding apace. Already we are far behind the U.S.A., and for seventy years our rate of material progress has been behind that of several countries, in Europe and elsewhere. This is partly because many British investors in that time were more interested in sending their money abroad than in investing at home, so that domestic industries fell behind, and partly because, in the period between the two wars, there was so much unemployment and excess capacity in staple British industries that their owners had neither the money nor the will to re-invest. In consequence

many British industries need largely to be re-equipped with modern equipment if the workers are to produce all that is possible.

The argument must not, however, be pushed too far. The claims of consumption are as real as those of investment. The purpose of present investment is future consumption, and we would be foolish to starve ourselves in the present simply to increase consumption at some later date. The Russian government, for example, imposed an immense strain on its people in the 1930's when it decided to go all for producing machinery and guns instead of butter and shoes and houses, and we should certainly not try to imitate them. In a democratic country efforts to cut consumption or to keep it low, in favour of investment, are sure to be resisted. A government may get away with planning for as much as 15-20 per cent of the national income to be used for gross investment, but if it tries to go further than this it will meet considerable resistance.

If a government wishes to carry through a large investment programme without cutting consumption, the only remedy is foreign borrowing. That is what we have been doing in this country for the past three years. For example, in 1947 national production and national consumption were just about equal to production and consumption in 1938—a little more or less. Why then did we have a large adverse balance of payments in 1947 whereas we were almost in balance in 1938? The answer is because gross investment was very much larger; in fact the increase in gross investment was just about equal to the adverse balance of payments. This is not generally realised. There are those who speak as if the adverse balance is due to riotous living by the British people; and others who allege that the standard of living is being maintained only by American charity. The truth is simply that we have been borrowing abroad to finance capital formation at home. This is a very sensible thing to do, provided that the capital is not being wasted, and that the terms on which it is borrowed are not onerous. But it is possible only so long as, and to the extent that, other countries are willing to lend. If reasonable creditors abroad cannot be found, a country cannot invest at home, beyond the point where it has exhausted its reserves of gold and foreign exchange, without cutting consumption. And since the public is certain

to resist a cut in consumption, the government must limit its investment plans.

Whatever the figure at which it aims, the first principle of investment planning is that the government must have a budget surplus large enough to fill the gap between the investment that is planned and the voluntary savings that are available (including long-term borrowing from abroad). If it has not, then there will be either inflation at home, or an involuntary adverse balance of payments.

The second principle is that stocks of raw materials, work-in-progress and finished commodities are as important a part of investment as is fixed capital. For it is the existence of stocks that enables an economy to work smoothly. As soon as stocks are low productivity falls, because producers then depend absolutely on receiving a steady flow of supplies, and are held up cumulatively by chance interruptions in delivery. Normally these considerations are not important, and net investment in stocks is not required. But at the end of a war, or of an inflation, the economy is short of stocks, and a large investment in stocks is the first thing that is needed in order to get productivity as high as possible. When we remember that stocks should normally stand at between 3 and 6 months of requirements, the magnitude of the sums involved will be seen. Failure to build up stocks has been one of the principal errors of the British investment programme.

The third principle in investment planning is that investment must not be planned beyond the limits of the physical resources available, no less than the financial resources. It is no use planning for 20 per cent if the steel and timber available are enough only for 12 per cent. By all means expand the capital goods industries as rapidly as possible, so that it may become possible soon to plan for the desired level of investment. But the starting point now must be not what is desired, or what will be possible next year or the year after, but what the existing resources in the capital goods industries now permit, after making allowance for such part of their product as has to be exported. It is a common error of governments, including our own, to advance so many investment projects simultaneously that the available resources of steel, machinery, cement, labour, and so on are insufficient to cope with them all. Then there is

intolerable confusion. Many projects are started, and then held up at crucial points, and instead of having a substantial number of finished projects, we get instead a much larger number of unfinished projects, most of which cannot proceed because the resources they need for finishing are locked up in other unfinished projects. It is foolish to plan for more investment than the available physical resources will permit.

In our case we have added to our problems by doing what we can to encourage investment at a time when what was needed was discouragement. We came out of the war with such arrears of investment that if all the things people wanted to do were added together they would probably amount to 40 per cent to 50 per cent of the national income for some years. There were houses to be built, private industry to be re-equipped and extended, and a vast programme of governmental projects from schools and hospitals to coal and colonial development. At other times, and in other places, the problem is the reverse of this, namely, how to stimulate investment, and the government has then to mobilise its weapons, its subsidies, low interest rates, generous depreciation allowances, and the like. But in contemporary Britain what we need is to discourage investment; that is to say to find means of checking and eliminating the less urgent projects, so that the nation will not embark on more than the 20 per cent that is the financial limit, or the still smaller figure that the physical resources can support.

How is this to be done? There is the familiar choice between direction and inducement. The government can decide to license investment, so that every single project has to be examined by its officers (at one time we took this to the limit, in the building industry, of requiring a licence for decorations costing £10), or it can make new investment so costly that all except the most urgent projects, adding up to 20 per cent, are voluntarily postponed.

The method of licensing is so cumbersome that it cannot be efficient. Who is to decide between the relative urgencies of a new bridge in Basutoland, a new hospital in Aberystwyth, a new mousetrap factory in Glasgow, or a new cinema in Oxford? The answer is that nobody can decide, and that therefore conscientious officials, fully knowing that they have not the facts on which to base a judgment, will pass everything that seems



on the face of it to be reasonable. The result is always that more licences are granted than the available resources can fulfil, and that there is an unholy scramble in the course of which many of the most urgent projects are held up because the promoters of the less urgent have been more skilled in the arts of acquiring scarce materials.

To say this is not to imply that the alternative, which is to make new investment very costly, gives perfect results. It knocks out all the projects that cannot afford a high price, and some of these are urgent. But it is simpler for the government to correct this error by subsidising the projects which it considers specially urgent, so that they are able to afford the high cost of investment, than it is to launch upon the meaningless and ineffective method of licensing. Neither need the method of inducement and subsidy be costly to the government, as we shall see in a moment.

The traditional way of making investment more costly is to raise the rate of interest. It is an effective way, if the rate is raised high enough. For example, if £1,000 is invested for twenty years at 10 per cent, it must yield £117 a year for interest and repayment of capital. This would also be the annual charge if the rate of interest were kept at 3 per cent, but a tax imposed bringing the cost of investment up to £1,748. That is to say, on a twenty year investment the difference between a rate of 3 per cent and a rate of 10 per cent is equivalent to as much as a tax on investment of 75 per cent.

Raising the rate of interest may also help to increase voluntary saving, but this is much less certain. A savings campaign is very necessary in these circumstances, but raising the rate of interest does not make much contribution to this.

The objection to raising the rate of interest is that it increases the unearned incomes of lenders, doing this both at the expense of private borrowers and at the expense of the government, which is frequently in the market either for new loans or for purposes of conversion. This is not an insuperable objection, because it is always possible to adjust the taxes on unearned incomes in compensation. It seems a difficult political issue only because the left does not realise that when interest rates rise capital values fall *pari passu*, and the loss inflicted upon capitalists by this is much greater than any gain that accrues from

higher interest rates. Indeed, the real objection to playing about with interest rates is precisely the fact that this causes wide fluctuations in capital values which give an unfair bonus to property owners when rates fall, and impose an unfair tax upon them when rates rise (including some of those who have responded to savings campaigns).

The alternative way to make investment more costly is to impose a tax upon it. This is not as effective an alternative in one sense. A rise in the rate of interest hits investments for long periods harder than it hits short investments. It therefore encourages people, when capital is short, to use it for purposes that yield results in the immediate future rather than for those that take time to bear fruit. And this is one of the savings that we wish to make. A tax on investment, on the other hand, hits all investments equally, irrespective of their duration, and is therefore inferior to raising the rate of interest in the sense that it does not discriminate sufficiently against investments of long duration.

This argument is perhaps less forceful now that the majority of investments of long duration are in projects directly under government control, such as houses, communications, and fuel, for the government is less sensitive to changes in cost than is the private investor, and not therefore so easily controlled by such weapons as the rate of interest. Some would argue the other way; that since the government tends to be extravagant in its investment projects, it is all the more important to submit such projects to the test of the rate of interest. There cannot be much in this either way. The Treasury has to learn to put a global limit on government controlled investment, so that private industry shall not be starved of capital, and it has to develop its own technique (including possibly charging a high rate of interest to Government undertakings, actually or notionally) for rationing out what is available between the various government claimants. If Parliament, public opinion, and common sense will not force the Treasury to learn this lesson, then it is unlikely to let itself be forced by permitting high interest rates to be levied upon it.

We come here to a very serious problem for which no solution has yet been found. All planning governments tend to be at one or the other of two extremes. In the one case they produce

vast plans for houses, schools, hospitals, civic buildings, roads, and other forms of public works, and use up so much capital for these purposes that very little is left for productive industry, which is thus starved of capital. In the other case they fix their eyes on industrial projects, while housing gets worse and worse as people crowd in increasing numbers into towns that are building nothing but factories. Democratic governments, like that of the U.K., are particularly prone to the first error, because they win elections on programmes demanding a vast expansion of social services, while asking for the re-equipment of private industry gains no votes. Dictatorial governments, like that of Russia, and governments of backward countries anxious to industrialise are prone to the other error, and neglect to provide capital for social amenities. There is indeed no simple formula that tells us how to weigh up the respective capital needs of production and of social amenities; certainly the rate of interest (which would be the *laissez-faire* answer) cannot discriminate between the social usefulness of schools, health centres, roads, houses, irrigation works, and factories. We are here in one of those spheres of public administration where no precise line can be drawn, and where we depend simply on democratic judgment to ensure that neither extreme is adopted, to the exclusion either of productive investment or of social amenities. There are two things we can do. The first is to insist that productive enterprises should all have to pass the same tests, in their demands for capital, whether they are nationalised or in private hands; that is to say, that it is wrong that nationalised industries should be able to get capital more easily or more cheaply than private industries just because they are nationalised, and without other reference to their relative urgency and productivity, e.g. as compared with industries producing for export, or with agriculture, or with engineering. And secondly we can insist on publication and free public discussion of the annual capital budget, which shows how the available capital is to be allocated between the various claimants; of this we shall say more in the final chapter.

This digression on the control of governmental demands on capital interrupted a discussion of the relative merits of taxing investment and of raising the rate of interest as means of reducing demand to the level of supply. The first disadvantage of

the taxing method, we saw, was that it does not discriminate in favour of short term investments and against long term investments, as does raising the rate of interest. The second disadvantage is the administrative problems that it raises. The simplest way to impose the tax would be to put (import or excise) duties upon those materials that are needed in nearly all investments, namely steel, timber, bricks and cement. Such a tax would be easy to collect, and though it might cause some shift to substitute materials, this would be negligible. More serious would be the fact that it would necessitate paying a drawback on exports using these materials. Exporters would find this a nuisance, and full of anomalies, but since they would be receiving money for once, instead of paying it out, they would probably bear the burden cheerfully.

Against these disadvantages must be set an important advantage. If the rate of interest is raised, investment is as if it were taxed for the benefit of private lenders; but if the government imposes a tax, the proceeds go not to private lenders but into the public coffers. This has the additional advantage of providing a fund that can be used to subsidise those desirable investments which cannot afford to pay the higher cost.

To sum up, neither raising the rate of interest nor taxing investment is without disadvantage, and probably what is needed is some combination of both. Either of these is superior to setting officials to assess the merits of each project, but even this is better than to make no effort at all to keep investment projects within the limits of the available resources.

#### CONCLUSION

The conclusions of this chapter are as follows:

- (1) The state is justified in stimulating investment if investment would otherwise be too low; but the problem of contemporary Britain is rather to check investment.
- (2) There must be a budget surplus equal to the difference between voluntary savings and investment, or there will be either inflation or an adverse balance of payments.
- (3) There must be adequate provision for stocks.

(4) The sum of investment projects must not exceed the physical resources available in the capital goods industries, after allowing for exports.

(5) The licensing of investment is an inefficient way of keeping this sum within the necessary limits.

(6) The best way to achieve this purpose is a combination of a high rate of interest and a tax on some of the materials used for investment.

## V

# Foreign Trade

IN the *laissez-faire* philosophy at its most extreme there is no place for a special chapter on foreign trade. No significant difference between domestic and foreign trade is recognised. Trade between London and Paris or New York does not differ from trade between Cardiff and Glasgow, and needs no special treatment. Foreign trade is self-regulating, and raises no problems that domestic trade does not raise. There may be people who still believe all this, but they are now very rare.

### PROTECTION

The first breach in this position is made when it is accepted that, whatever may be the case for or against a general regulation of trade, affecting all imports and exports, there may be a case for deciding that certain particular industries should be maintained at home, to the exclusion or curtailment of imports. Two important classes are generally admitted.

First there are defence industries. In the past much of the case for protecting agriculture has rested on this ground. More recently it has become plain that the countries that win wars are not those that are self-sufficient in food, or that have a sturdy peasantry, but rather those that are highly industrialised, and the emphasis is changing now to steel, and chemicals and some branches of engineering.

The second exception recognises the fact that an industry is not at its strongest until it has attained a certain size and experience. Hence, if protection were ruled out, often the country that started an industry would be able, by competing abroad, to prevent other countries from following in its footsteps, and might succeed in making substantial profits at their expense, although, if once their industries were able to get past their teething troubles, they would be quite as efficient as that

of the country first in the field. This infant industry argument is now seen to have very wide implications. For what is true of one industry is even more true of industrialisation as a whole. Countries predominantly agricultural are at a disadvantage when they start to industrialise, in competition with the older industrial countries. But, given a stage of protection, they may in due course be perfectly capable of holding their own.

Both these cases have their parallel on the side of exports. The defence argument is used frequently to justify banning certain exports, or exports of certain goods to certain countries, e.g. from the U.S.A. to the U.S.S.R. And there are many examples in history of countries trying to keep at home certain inventions or types of machinery, in order to prevent competitors from catching up.

Another restriction now widely accepted, is control over the export of capital. This is a necessary corollary of planning for equality, since, in the absence of such control, capitalists can evade equalitarian measures by exporting their capital. To prevent any capital whatsoever from being exported would be a formidable task, but the larger movements can be controlled without excessive restrictions.

#### BALANCING PAYMENTS

These arguments for particular prohibitions can be accepted without damaging the general case. If foreign trade is to be left to regulate itself (apart from these exceptions to which no further reference will be made), then imports and exports must balance, when invisible items and long term capital movements are included. For, if imports and exports do not balance, then the net result of foreign trade will be either inflationary, if exports are in surplus, or deflationary if imports exceed exports. The essence of the *laissez-faire* case is that this balance is secured automatically. If this is so, it follows that attempts to regulate trade are mischievous. Each person should buy in the cheapest market, whether at home or abroad; if this causes imports to rise, exports will rise also. Domestic employment cannot be increased by reducing imports, because this will reduce exports to the same extent. And the national income cannot be increased

by shutting out imports, because this will merely cause resources to be diverted to produce for home consumption away from the more profitable export markets that they were previously serving. If it were true that a mechanism existed which automatically linked imports and exports, these conclusions would be beyond challenge. Foreign trade could be left to look after itself, and the state need not plan it.

The extreme *laissez-faire* position sees such a mechanism in the foreign exchange market, with freely fluctuating rates of exchange. Here exports and imports (including invisible items) are kept equal by the currency being driven to whatever level is needed to keep them equal. This follows because importers are selling the currency to get foreign currencies to pay for what they have bought, and exporters are selling foreign currencies and buying their own. Since the price will move to whatever level equates demand and supply, it will automatically equate imports and exports. But since demand and supply change, not only from day to day but even from hour to hour, the result of this free market is a rate that fluctuates constantly. It is generally agreed that these fluctuations are undesirable, and that it is more convenient and better for trade to stabilise rates of exchange.

To fix the rate of exchange, however, is to make a sharp break with *laissez-faire*, for the state is at once dragged into the picture. The rate can be stabilised only if someone agrees always to buy and sell at the stipulated rate, and that someone has to be the government or its agent.

Once the rate is fixed, some other mechanism must be found to keep imports and exports in equilibrium. The modified *laissez-faire* position is still that the adjustment can be procured automatically. If imports are too large, money leaves the country. Prices therefore fall in the country with an import surplus, and rise in those countries that have a corresponding export surplus. The fall of prices makes home produced goods cheaper than imports, and so reduces imports; it also cheapens exports, and so increases them. So long as imports exceed exports, on this view, prices will continue to fall through money leaving the country to pay for the import surplus, and so imports will be checked and exports increased until they once more balance. Similarly if exports are too large, money comes



into the country, prices rise, imports become relatively cheaper and larger, exports become relatively dearer and smaller, and so the export surplus is whittled away. This process is supposed to be automatic, but in order to make sure that it should work, governments are enjoined to reinforce it. When money is coming in, they should multiply it, so that prices at home do not fail to rise; and when it is flowing out they should give an extra turn to the tap reducing the circulation of money so that prices should not succeed in resisting the fall. Thus instead of the domestic price level being independent, and the foreign exchange rate fluctuating in order to effect adjustments, the foreign rate is stabilised, and the domestic price level is required to adjust to the changing conditions of foreign trade.

The trouble, of course, is that the domestic price level refuses to behave as this theory demands. When there is an import surplus prices fall a little, but not much. The adjustment that should be effected through prices is then effected through employment. The deficiency of effective demand due to the import surplus causes employment and the national income to contract by a multiple of the surplus. Exports increase very little, because prices are not falling, and the bulk of the adjustment is borne by the domestic income contracting so much that imports are eventually reduced to equality with exports. The real alternative to a changing exchange rate is not a changing domestic price level, but a changing level of employment and of national income.

Moreover, it is not only the domestic national income that contracts by the multiple of a deficit; it is also the volume of international trade. If one country has a large export surplus, paralleled by an import surplus in the other countries, this surplus could be eliminated if each of the deficit countries deliberately cut its imports from the surplus country, and there would be no multiplier effects. But if such deliberate and discriminatory planning is forbidden, each deficit country will reduce its imports all round as income contracts, and the deficit countries will reduce their trade with each other, as well as with the surplus country, thus effecting a much greater contraction of total trade than is necessary.

The moral of this is that it is indeed true that foreign trade is self-regulating, and will look after itself without interference;

but it is also true that the results of this self-regulation may be disastrous.

If the rate of exchange is to be kept stable, governments must have the right to control imports directly, so as to keep them in line with exports without having to suffer the deflations and inflations that automatic regulation would involve. They must also have the right to discriminate against surplus countries. The choice is between a free exchange rate and planned foreign trade.

It must, however, be noted at once that this planning must follow internationally agreed rules, or we shall all be worse off than if there were no planning. Thus a government is justified in controlling imports if it has an adverse balance; but if countries with an export surplus proceed to cut imports the best efforts of deficit countries to achieve balance will be frustrated. Similarly, a deficit country is entitled to try to redress its position by depreciating its exchange rate, but it cannot succeed in doing this if the surplus countries insist on depreciating *pari passu*. International trade and exchange policy must be governed by rules, as much in the interest of the weak as in the interest of the strong. That is why the U.K., temporarily a weak country, has been right in sponsoring the Bretton Woods monetary agreement, and the International Trade Charter. Neither of these documents is perfect; but they do embody rules designed to restrict the arbitrary actions of the strong. Given that there are international rules to preserve order, the choice can be exercised between varying exchange rates and applying more direct controls.

Using the rate of exchange to equilibrate export and imports does not necessarily involve day to day fluctuations. The rate can be set at the level which is expected to be adequate over the average of a period ahead, while allowing day to day fluctuations in demand and supply to be met from day to day changes in the working stock of gold and foreign exchange reserves. This was the purpose of the Exchange Equalisation system operated during the 'thirties; the rate could be altered to meet a fundamental disequilibrium, but was stabilised in face of short term changes that would cancel out.

This technique is most appropriate to a small country whose imports and exports are competitive. In such a case the prices

that the country receives for its exports or pays for its imports are outside its control, and its terms of trade are not affected by changes in the foreign exchange rate. If its currency depreciates, the prices of its imports and its exports rise correspondingly in terms of local currency, while remaining unchanged in terms of foreign currency. Production for export is thus made more profitable, and attracts additional resources; and since the world market is large relatively to the country's exports, additional exports can easily be sold. At the same time the rise in the price of imports checks demand. Exchange depreciation thus automatically reduces imports and increases exports, and will secure equilibrium if pushed far enough.

Even in this most favourable case, however, there may be snags. If the imports are essential commodities, even a large increase in price may have little effect on demand; then the whole burden of adjustment falls on exports, and the ease with which it is borne depends on how easily the flow of resources to exports responds to additional prices for exports. If this flow also is slow, the rate of exchange may be forced down very low indeed. Moreover, as import prices rise, the cost of living rises, and workers demand and receive higher wages. This can frustrate the whole purpose of exchange depreciation, which works by reducing the domestic price level relatively to world prices. If every time the rate of exchange falls, wages and the domestic price level rise correspondingly, exchange depreciation cannot equilibrate imports and exports. Even a small country, therefore, may find itself, when the exchange rate falls, trying to stabilise the internal price level by subsidising imports; and since this puts the whole burden of adjustment upon exports, it may have to take vigorous measures to increase exports directly. And it may end, if resources are slow to move, by limiting imports by licence, and stimulating exports by direction.

The larger the country the greater the snags. Exchange depreciation by a large country almost inevitably causes the terms of trade to deteriorate. Prices of imports fall somewhat in terms of foreign currency if it is a large consumer, but prices of exports also fall, and if it is a manufacturing country whose exporters base quotations on domestic costs, export prices in foreign currency may fall by the whole amount of the depreciation. Export prices then fail to rise in domestic currency, and

resources are not attracted to exports. At the same time the fall of prices in foreign currency stimulates foreign demand, but unless this stimulus is substantial (i.e. unless the elasticity of foreign demand exceeds unity) the country will actually get less foreign exchange for more exports. In the long run foreign demand is elastic; buyers will change over to the sellers with lowest prices, but in the short run foreign demand is much less elastic, and exchange depreciation may worsen the position of a deficit country. The experience of the United Kingdom in the last three years is a grim example of this. We have had an adverse balance, but foreign demand has been very inelastic, and if we had depreciated the pound we would have lost heavily. On the contrary, we would have done better if we had put the pound higher. This, for example, has been the secret of Belgian prosperity. In the year June 1946 to June 1947, according to calculations made by the Economic Commission for Europe, the Belgian index of commodities available for home use (basis 1938) stood at 123, while the U.K. index was only at 95. But this was not because Belgium had recovered faster than Britain, for Belgian production was only at 94 while British production was at 108. The difference was due to the fact that Belgium was importing more than pre-war and exporting less (imports 120, exports 71 in the first nine months of 1947) while Britain was importing less and exporting more (77, 106). How did Belgium manage to finance a higher level of imports from a lower level of exports? Partly from windfall payments on invisible account. But very largely, also, by selling at high prices. In terms of dollars the Belgian export price index was at 261, while the British was at 182. 71 per cent quantum sold at 261 per cent price yields 185 per cent revenue, which is nearly as much as 106 per cent quantum sold at 182 per cent price, yielding 193 per cent revenue. The Belgians earned as much in foreign exchange while keeping their goods at home to add to home consumption instead of exporting them. British visitors to Belgium thought that the obvious signs of prosperity there were due to a greater recovery, and wondered whether this was not due to greater *laissez-faire*; but it was, in fact, due mainly to better planning of the foreign exchange rate. It is now clear that we would have gained by putting the pound higher in 1945; if its dollar rate had been 25 per cent higher we should have saved some

£600 million pounds or so of gold and foreign exchange. No doubt we could not hold the pound for ever at that level, because as industry elsewhere expands demand will become more elastic; over-valuation in the nineteen twenties, for example, proved very costly. But all this only reinforces the point that equilibrium cannot always be attained by following simple rules of exchange manipulation.

The major snag is the slowness with which resources move. If adjustment were perfect, the rate of exchange would always achieve equilibrium. As it fell, and prices of imports rose in domestic currency, domestic production of substitutes would expand rapidly, and imports would fall substantially. As export prices rose, if the terms of trade were unaffected, or as foreign demand increased and raised export prices, resources would move rapidly into export industries. Thus, whether by checking imports or by expanding exports or both, exchange depreciation would do the trick, and do it rapidly. Unfortunately the movement of resources is very slow. Once we have reached an equilibrium position we can hope to keep it without foreign trade controls if there are no major changes in demand or supply. But when we are as far from equilibrium as most countries of Europe are today, the licensing of imports and the direction of exports are essential.

A shortage of foreign currency is of all shortages the most ruinous to the attempt to plan solely by inducement, not only because it is itself difficult to eliminate without more rigid controls, but also because controls applied to imports and exports work their way through to bind almost the whole economy. It is therefore all the more desirable to eliminate this shortage as rapidly as possible, and even with the most vigorous forms of control. (That is to say, it is desirable to eliminate an import surplus if it is an unwanted surplus, which will be the case to the extent to which it is not covered by long term borrowing from abroad; a surplus financed by long term borrowing does not give rise to a shortage of foreign exchange.)

The most common cause of an import surplus in Europe today is the fact that most countries are investing more than their peoples are willing to save. The difference is paid by foreigners (in so far as it does not come out of foreign exchange and gold reserves), and takes the form either of excessive

imports or of too low a level of exports. It can be eliminated by importing less or exporting more, and both of these can be enforced by physical controls, but in that case the money that would otherwise have been spent either on imports or on domestic goods now exported will most of it chase after the reduced supply of goods at home and increase the inflationary pressures. The first step towards equilibrium is therefore to mop up this money; that is to say, to increase domestic savings or to increase taxation, or if neither of these can be done, to cut investment. Monetary control can go most of the way to closing the foreign gap, and it is this that most European countries need most, even more than exchange control. But monetary control may not go all the way to eliminate the shortage of foreign currency. For even when there is no inflation, indeed even if there is considerable unemployment, it may nevertheless be the case that domestic production of the types of exports that foreign buyers like is small, and that relatively to what can be exported imports are too high. Control of imports is then necessary, and also measures to increase exports, such as the fixing of compulsory export quotas, and drastic measures to man up export industries. A country like the U.K., which has at the same time a high propensity to import, a severe maldistribution of labour, and a high degree of immobility of resources is bound to be rigidly controlled for some time. The need for these controls depends not only on the removal of inflation but also on the speed with which productive resources can be reallocated. It is immobility which principally makes physical controls necessary, and we shall revert to this subject in the next chapter.

#### THE TRADE CYCLE

Unfortunately, the difficulties do not end here. If foreign demand were relatively stable, changing, but only slowly, licensing and direction could be used to correct a fundamental maladjustment, and then abandoned; equilibrium thereafter being maintained solely by occasional adjustments of the rate of exchange. But foreign trade shows no such stability. It fluctuates violently both in price and in quantity, in response to the trade cycle. For many years this cycle has been dominated by

the U.S.A., and it is safe to say that the fluctuations of world trade depend largely on domestic events in the U.S.A.

The first reaction to this unpleasant situation is naturally to try to reduce dependence on the U.S.A. Thus in these days schemes for starting trading clubs excluding the U.S.A. have become very popular, especially imperial preference, customs unions, and bulk trading contracts between governments. Each of these has serious technical limitations which make it much less effective than is supposed, but each has some advantages. It is very desirable that production should be increased substantially outside the United States, even apart from any question of trade fluctuations, so that the export surplus of the U.S.A. may be eliminated; and so long as that surplus persists, discrimination against the U.S.A. is also a desirable alternative to a general deflation of international trade. This case for discrimination is reinforced by the instability of American trade; until such time as the U.S.A. effectively pursues a full employment policy, nations that are planning for stable employment are justified in seeking to reduce their relations with the U.S.A.

But all this is not likely to get very far. In the first place, the United States is the world's biggest importer of raw materials, and one of the biggest importers of food. All primary producers are interested in and dependent upon this valuable market, and they transmit this dependence to the manufacturing countries who sell to them, and who would thus be affected by American fluctuations even if they themselves had no direct trade with the U.S.A. And, secondly, most countries in the world look to the U.S.A. for loans. Countries dependent on the U.S.A. either for trade or for loans cannot practise more discrimination against the U.S.A. than that country is willing to allow. The U.S.A. has already indicated how much discrimination against itself it will tolerate; this is stated in the Bretton Woods agreement, in the International Trade Charter, and in the Marshall agreements. We must use it such as it is, and we may ask for more; but to try to get more adopted in defiance of the U.S.A. is a waste of time. The other countries concerned are in no position to defy the United States. What we are most entitled to demand is that the rules of Bretton Woods be altered in two ways; first, to make it easier to declare a currency to be 'scarce'

when it is in fact scarce, and secondly, to add the power to require a country which has a persistent export surplus to appreciate the value of its currency. The latter is the easiest form of discrimination to work, and the most likely to be accepted.

We must resign ourselves to cyclical fluctuations in international trade until such time as the U.S.A. is converted to planning for stability. This means that the prices of imports, measured in dollars, will rise and fall at regular intervals, and that the domestic price level will fluctuate similarly unless special steps are taken to stabilise it.

If the foreign exchange rate is kept stable through the upswing of the cycle the cost of living will rise, and wages and the domestic price level will also be dragged upwards. Then, when the slump comes, import prices will fall. If it is then decided to keep wages stable and not to reduce them as the cost of living falls, then export prices will be high in relation to foreign prices which have fallen, and unemployment in the export trades will be severe. This might be avoided by depreciating the foreign exchange rate when the downswing begins. But this will mean that the domestic price level rises each time there is a boom abroad, but never falls; and the foreign exchange rate falls each time there is a slump, and never rises. There will thus be a cumulative inflation of domestic prices, and a cumulative depreciation of the pound. This is most undesirable. If wages and the domestic price level are to rise when foreign prices rises, then they must also fall when foreign prices fall.

Domestic prices could be stabilised by subsidising imports in the boom and taxing them in the slump, since this would keep the cost of living steady. But what then happens to exports? It is desirable that British export prices should rise when foreign prices rise and fall when foreign prices fall. Otherwise we are deliberately turning the terms of trade against ourselves in the boom, when we sell the largest quantities with the least effective competition, and the fact that they will turn in our favour in the slump, when we sell smaller quantities in acute competition, is no compensation for this. This is the policy we have been pursuing in the past three years—subsidising imports to keep wages and prices steady, and thus keeping down the prices of exports, and deliberately turning the terms of trade against ourselves. This is a foolish policy, which has already cost us



several hundred million pounds of foreign reserves. If we stabilise the rate of exchange, and stabilise wages and the cost of living by subsidy, then we must raise export prices by imposing export taxes. Import subsidies and export taxes together can stabilise the domestic price level without causing adverse terms of trade, but one without the other is too costly.

The alternative way to stabilise internal prices, without the bother of paying subsidies and collecting taxes, is to destabilise the foreign exchange rate. On this plan the rate appreciates during the boom and depreciates during the slump. The simplest way to achieve this is to link the rate to an American index of wholesale prices, or a U.N.O. index of foreign trade prices. This has obvious disadvantages, but it would be much better than the policy we have pursued in the last three years.

In sum, the existence of the trade cycle presents grave difficulties in foreign trade, to which there is no perfect solution. There are three choices; to let wages and prices rise in the upswing, *on condition that they fall in the downswing*; or, to stabilise wages and prices by subsidising imports in the upswing, *on condition that exports are correspondingly taxed*; or to appreciate the pound in the upswing, and depreciate in the downswing. The first of these would be resisted by the workers, and the second by the merchant community. This leaves the third as the most politically acceptable choice, though not necessarily the best economically. Whichever we choose, none is so bad as the policy which we are now actually pursuing at such great loss to the nation as a whole.

#### CONCLUSION

The conclusions of this chapter may be summarised as follows:

- (1) Some types of foreign transaction need regulation, without prejudice to the general issue; examples are controls in the interest of defence or of infant industries, and restrictions on refugee capital.
- (2) General control of trade is unnecessary if imports and exports can be kept equal without it, and without grave inconvenience; but this is seldom the case.

(3) An absolutely free rate of exchange is a nuisance; and an absolutely fixed rate of exchange is incompatible with domestic stability in countries where costs are inflexible.

(4) State planning of foreign trade would be ineffective and chaotic in the absence of international agreements prescribing the rules that planning must follow.

(5) In the long run imports and exports can be equilibrated by fixing an appropriate rate of exchange, subject to alteration as conditions change; but in the short run further controls are required, if the mobility of resources is low.

(6) Special measures to stimulate production in and trade between countries other than the U.S.A. are desirable so long as the U.S.A. has an export surplus (not covered by loans) and so long as the U.S.A. does not plan for stable employment and trade.

(7) While trade cycles last we must either let the domestic price level fluctuate with foreign prices, or let the foreign exchange rate fluctuate. We must not stabilise both domestic and external rates unless we adopt both import subsidies and export taxes.

## VI

# *Mobility*

THE efficiency of the market mechanism depends primarily on the mobility of resources, which is necessary if there is to be rapid adjustment without abnormal price movements and the hardship that they inflict. If there were perfect mobility we should never need rationing or licences, for we should never have shortages. (We could still have a general shortage if we were suffering from suppressed inflation; but the remedy for this is not rationing or licensing but disinflation.) If the quantity of money is just right, a shortage in one part of the economy must be balanced by overabundance elsewhere, and, given perfect mobility, it must rapidly disappear. It may be that the shortage is of female cotton workers in Lancashire, while the overabundance is of navvies in Kent. Perfect mobility does not require that the navvy should travel from Kent to the Lancashire mill. There is a general readjustment; he displaces someone who displaces someone else, who displaces someone else who goes into cotton. Each moves a little way until adjustment is complete. The shortage disappears when all that is wanted can be purchased freely at a reasonable price, and a reasonable price is that which corresponds to the normal average cost of production. Shortages are therefore the result of the immobility of our resources, and so also is such need as there is to use planning by direction. If we could greatly increase mobility we could eliminate all shortages, and could rely exclusively on planning by inducement. The quickest way to get rid of shortages and of licences is therefore to concentrate on immobility.

This applies as much to foreign trade as it does to domestic production. We are short of imports because we are short of exports. This is partly due to inflation, which keeps resources working for home demand, but it would not disappear at once, even if the quantity of money were right, because of immobility. Given perfect mobility, the resources released by

disinflation would flow into export industries, where there is a great shortage of labour. The movement would not be direct, but would be achieved by many people making small adjustments. But in the absence of mobility disinflation creates pools of unemployment which do not necessarily reduce the shortage of labour in essential industries. The existence of immobility then comes to be used as an argument for inflation; it is no use making navvies unemployed in Kent, we are told, because there are not enough cotton operatives in Lancashire. But how are we to get more cotton operatives unless pressure is applied in other parts of the economic system? Disinflation applies pressure deliberately to what is considered least essential. The only other alternative is to carry on with the inessential while applying pressure (which in the absence of disinflation has to be the direction of labour) to industries which are themselves essential though not so essential as the export trades. Disinflation cannot be pursued smoothly unless there is a high degree of mobility; without mobility we are driven to direction of labour and of other resources.

Similarly, in the absence of mobility we cannot eliminate unemployment completely without inflation. If there were perfect mobility the 2 to 3 per cent of the population whose unemployment is frictional would disappear; there would be no frictional unemployment. But given immobility, which separates those who need work from the work of highest priority that is available, we can eliminate unemployment altogether only by providing a shortage of work everywhere, and eliminating the distinction between urgent and less urgent work. Such inflation in the labour market leads straight to the direction of labour. It is better to accept the 2 to 3 per cent and to concentrate on reducing it by eliminating immobility.

We see this problem at its worst when we consider the implications of foreign trade in a fluctuating world economy. We shall soon be in the position that about 20 per cent of the labour force depends directly on export markets. What is to happen when there is a slump and exports contract? We talk glibly of planning for full employment, but how are we to employ the workers displaced from export trades? If there were perfect mobility it would be easy; we would expand the monetary circulation and thus provide additional jobs in working for

increased domestic consumption, or increased investment, or increased government service. But, with our resources as they are, such work will not be easy to organise—the equipment and the workers will not always be found together. We cannot get rid of cyclical unemployment, until we greatly increase the mobility of resources.

Equally difficult is the problem that we may call the post-re-equipment transition. At the end of the war there are great shortages of equipment to be made up, but there will come a day when the principal shortages have been made good. The back of the housing shortage will have been broken, and the demand for building labourers reduced. The mines will have been fully mechanised, and the demand both for miners and for makers of mining machinery will slacken, and so on. We cannot guarantee to each worker in each industry that his job will always be there until he dies. Full employment guarantees him some job, but not any particular job, and as conditions change many existing jobs will become redundant, and workers will be required to shift into new occupations. But, unless the workers are satisfied that new jobs will easily be found for them, they will continue, in the future as in the past, to try to resist all changes that may make the job they are doing redundant. We shall be back to restrictive practices and a low standard of living. Without easy mobility none of our problems is soluble.

If the first task of the planner is thus to ensure that there is the right amount of money in circulation, neither too much nor too little, his second priority must be to facilitate mobility. Given these two all else is easy; shortages melt away, trade balances, unemployment disappears, and so on. But if either of these two policies is defective the planner is plunged into a maze of price controls, licences and directions, in which much of efficiency and of freedom is easily lost.

The way to facilitate mobility is to plan the location of industry, to facilitate the acquisition of skills and to plan the wage structure.

#### LOCATION

The need to facilitate mobility is only one aspect of the problem of location, which we must examine in its widest setting.

The truth is that the market mechanism, acting through prices, is wholly incompetent to procure the correct location of industry. For example, if we are considering the disadvantages of allowing large towns to grow, such factors as traffic congestion do appear in prices, but inferior health conditions reflect less adequately and military considerations hardly reflect at all. Prices reflect wages, but wages are bad guides to location, for, wages being sticky, the wage differentials between towns where there is heavy unemployment and towns where there is not are not as wide as a free market would require. Similarly, the prices of services provided by public authorities do not adequately reflect social costs, with the result that new industries causing a town to expand do not pay the full extra costs they impose by way of extra schools, hospitals and so on, while in depressed areas, as excess capacity develops the rates tend to rise instead of to fall. Again, there is nothing in prices to reflect the disadvantage, in terms of mobility and thus also of unemployment and human misery, of having an entire region specialised to a particular trade, and dependent on its fortunes. Nor do prices adequately check the cumulative or multiplier processes at work in location. If by some chance accident a big factory migrates from one town to another (not necessarily only because the manager's wife wishes to be near London) cumulative forces are set up. The loss of purchasing power in the town it has left reduces the markets for firms that remain, and causes some to move, their movement in turn driving away still more. And in the town to which it has moved there is a cumulative upswing. Prices are supposed to check these tendencies through rents and quasi-rents, but these are sticky. This is why when a town starts to run down, it may die, and its industries transfer to some other town which grows rapidly, although in fact there is very little to choose between the two towns, and certainly not enough to justify the big differences caused by the cumulative process. (This recalls the similar deflationary process in export trade; those who say that there is no difference between foreign and domestic trade are right—both may cause serious waste and hardship if unregulated, and through the same processes.) The fact is simply that the price mechanism is a bad guide to location. This is certainly one of the most necessary spheres for planning.

But, of course, it is not true that *any* planning is better than none. There are important issues in deciding what to plan, how to plan, and where to plan.

Only mobile industries should be planned, that is to say only industries that are not tied to particular locations, either because they are service industries or because they need particular raw materials or types of labour or water supplies or other services that can be provided elsewhere only at much higher social cost. When we undertake to plan location we are assuming that there exists a large number of these mobile industries, sufficient to give us the diversification that we need. No one can foresee whether this will prove to be true, for no one knows what types of industry are most likely to be expanding in this country in the next twenty-five years, nor what their locational needs must be.

It is this that makes the technique of location planning so important. When areas are scheduled for restriction, it is important to restrict only the mobile industries, which will not be gravely handicapped if they locate elsewhere; other industries should have freedom to locate where they please. And when we are seeking to develop particular regions it is better to proceed by inducement than by direction. We have rightly decided that the best way to encourage new industries is to provide the basic services that they require, especially using the happy invention of the trading estate, and to subsidise such services if necessary. If industry will not come to an area even when special efforts are made to reduce the cost of working there, it is dangerous to direct it there, for there must be something basically wrong with the area.

What should guide the choice of areas? Military factors seem to have been dominant in selecting the London area for discouragement, with almost universal approval, but there is less agreement on the choice of areas for encouragement. Nearly everyone agrees that the old special areas should be given new industries, because people and services are already there, even though it is agreed that it is a bad proposition ever to 'freeze' the current geographical distribution of the population. Actually, the war has solved most of this problem; given a full employment policy the special areas will soon have enough industries to provide work for all. The sharpest dispute has

been over the new industrial areas which must arise with the growth of population: should new industries be dispersed throughout the countryside, providing extra opportunities of employment for the families of agricultural workers, or should they be concentrated in new towns? For the moment the 'romantics' have won, with the aid of the shortage of agricultural labour; the rural atmosphere is to be preserved. It is in any case doubtful whether dispersal could ever get far; factories like to be close together, where they can share good basic industrial facilities; there are some industries which could survive without subsidy dispersed in lonely rural isolation, but they are not very numerous.

To facilitate mobility we must add to these considerations the need to diversify regions, so that if a major industry slumps its workers can be easily absorbed into other industries close at hand. This means that no major industry subject to drastic fluctuations should be confined in a single region, and that no region should be dependent on some such industry. The major industries subject to drastic fluctuation are the export industries, especially textiles, coal, iron and steel and some branches of engineering. We need to move some of the textile factories of Lancashire and Yorkshire into regions not now so dependent on exports, e.g. into the south, and into some of the new towns; to move some of the domestic industries into their place, and some more into regions now too dependent on coal, on ship-building, or on export engineering. We have not started to tackle this problem yet, but it will stare us starkly in the face with the first slump in foreign trade. It is indeed staring us in the face now, with the boom in foreign trade and the shortage of labour in export trades, which is partly due to their geographical concentration. At first we tried to avoid facing it, but the dwindling of foreign reserves put an end to that, and now we are trying to meet it by half-hearted importation of foreign labour. This is inevitable; as industry is now located the quickest way to fill the gaps is selective immigration, and we cannot afford to wait on slower methods. But the slump will come, and cannot be ignored or met by expelling foreign labour. It can be met only by so dispersing export industries amongst those catering for home demand, that it becomes easy to affect rapid transfers from one to the other. Here we have not even



made the preliminary survey of what is involved, but until we achieve this diversification all glib talk of guaranteeing full employment is so much foolishness.

Planning location is a very difficult job, and one in which we are sure to make many mistakes. Here, as much as anywhere else, policy must be flexible, criticism must be welcomed, and there must be full opportunities for appeal. Planners know what has happened in the past, but they cannot foresee the future. The major industries of today will be forgotten tomorrow. In twenty-five years Britain's greatness will depend on industries which are only now germinating, and whose progress depends on the freedom allowed to men of initiative. In this respect our problems are much more complicated than those of newer countries because it is we who pioneer the new, while they have only to imitate. At this stage of their development Russia and Eastern European countries are merely establishing industries that Western Europe and the U.S.A. have fully explored long ago; they have fewer mistakes to make, and their planning, however rigid, cannot do as much damage as would rigid planning in this country.

#### SKILL

A much less difficult problem is that of facilitating the acquisition of skills, so that the unemployed may be absorbed easily into new trades. In olden days a long apprenticeship was thought necessary, and so it still is, in some jobs; but in many others a man may now learn as much in a well organised training centre in six weeks or in three months or in six months as he learnt before in four years of haphazard apprenticeship. This is now recognised, and many government training centres have accordingly been established.

The difficulty that remains is the unwillingness of some trade unions to accept newcomers who have not had the traditional apprenticeship. This is based often on real concern for standards; but as often it is based on fear. There are many hangovers from the days of mass unemployment, and this is one of them. Once the workers are persuaded, by experience, that, whatever may happen, British governments will always have the maintenance of full employment as one of their first objectives,

this sort of fear will disappear. But we must not be surprised if centuries of hard experience are not rejected overnight. Fortunately the industries in which objection to 'dilution' is a problem are not numerous, and this is not now one of the major obstacles to mobility.

#### CONDITIONS OF WORK

Wages and other conditions of work play a smaller role in determining mobility than is usually thought. If the quantity of money were right a shortage of labour in some trades would always be balanced by unemployment in others, and, given no geographical obstacles to mobility, the unemployment would quickly be absorbed even though wages were no higher in the trades where labour was short than in trades where labour was abundant. It is only where there is inflation, and jobs can be had in all trades, that it becomes necessary sharply to differentiate in wages and conditions between jobs that are essential and those that are not.

It so happens, in contemporary Britain, that the differentiation works the wrong way. The essential jobs, where labour is now most scarce, are to a large extent jobs in which labour was overabundant between the wars. It is not merely that wages in these jobs have been low—that can be remedied overnight; it is also that the conditions of workplaces are unfavourable—buildings are old, and welfare accommodation poor—and, still worse, that the record of these industries, in terms of unemployment and prospects of security, is so bad that workers have lost confidence in these industries. These difficulties cannot be overcome rapidly. We can raise wages, make a start on improving physical conditions, and swear to maintain full employment, but it will be long before the status of these industries is restored to a level at which recruits flow in easily.

This is also a reminder that wages are not the only or the dominating attraction to a job. But, once we have levelled up the physical conditions and wiped out the memory of insecurity, they come into their own again. They are important both positively and negatively; positively in that superior wages do attract, and negatively in that superior wages are needed to offset unpleasant conditions of labour—work that is dirty or

hot or monotonous. In conditions of full employment jobs of equal skill must be paid equal wages, with allowances one way or the other for differences in the pleasantness of the work. To achieve this position we shall need in this country a radical overhaul of the structure of wages, for the existing structure belongs to an economy of mass unemployment rather than to the nineteen-fifties. The dirty jobs are paid less than the clean jobs, of equal skill; many unskilled wages are too high, relatively to those of craftsmen; the wages of women and of boys are appropriate only to the old conditions when women and boys were in surplus supply; wages in consumer goods industries and services are too high in relation to the producer goods industries; methods of payment do not offer sufficient incentive; and so on. Until these matters are righted many essential industries will continue to find it difficult to attract away from the inessential all the labour they need.

This is the case for the planning of wages. What is needed is not to 'freeze' wages, but on the contrary to raise a great number of classes of wages which are now too low. But this is a task which can succeed only if those wages that are not in the priority classes can be held while the adjustment is effected.

In planning to leave behind the days of violent boom and slump, in which unemployment forced wages to adjust to relative shortages, we leave behind the days when each trade union could safely be left to try to get as much as it could for itself. Wages must now be subject to central control. But who is to control the centre? In a democratic country wages cannot be controlled without the full consent and cooperation not only of the union leaders, but also of the rank and file, and this means that we cannot even embark on solving this problem until it is widely understood by the rank and file, and until the will to solve it exists. To frame machinery that would examine each wage claim in relation to the general level of wages in the public interest is the task of a moment. But what we need now is rather to concentrate on the educational job of getting the rank and file to understand why, in a full employment economy, what matters is not the absolute level of wages, but the relation of each wage to the general level. Naturally, this proposition will not be accepted until the workers are convinced that the

government is earnestly planning for equality in other ways, is determined on full employment, and has the activities of capitalists well under control, and since all these things take time to demonstrate, there is little prospect of achieving a planned wage structure in the near future.

We cannot, in a word, solve the social problems left by centuries of *laissez-faire* in a year or two. In dealing with a wage structure, as with location, the best we can do is to begin to lay the foundations. It will be many years before the economy achieves flexibility. The corollaries of this are that the immediate urgencies of labour shortage in essential industries will have to be met largely by immigration; and that planning by direction, in the shape of rationing and licensing, which is due principally to immobility, will remain with us for some time yet. But the fact that these tasks will take us long to fulfil only makes it all the more urgent to work upon them now.

We have, in particular, been very foolish not to make full use of immigration, as other countries have done, to man up essential industries. We could have restored the output of coal to the pre-war level, and not only in this way reduced the adverse balance of payments and avoided our own fuel crisis, but also made a great contribution to European recovery, and to the comfort of the scores of millions on the continent whose wintry miseries in the past three years have been due to our nonchalant failure seriously to tackle the manpower problem in coal; we have a lot to answer for here. We could also have manned up agriculture, textiles, and other essential industries. In 1938 more than a quarter of our exports consisted of coal and of cotton and woollens. If we had the same volume of these exports today that we had then we should have no adverse balance, and we could have achieved this simply by allowing in about 200,000 workers, on condition that they went to work in essential industries. If we had done this we should now be able to import more food, and would be free of rationing and of other irksome controls of consumption. How small the margin has been very few people realise. 200,000 is only about 1 per cent of our working population, and it is only for lack of this 1 per cent that we have exposed ourselves to so much stress, and imposed upon other nations so much hardship. We could have got all the workers we needed very easily in 1946; they would have

been glad to have the opportunity to come, in spite of the overcrowded housing that was all that we could offer, knowing that in all other respects they would have exactly the same pay and conditions as their fellow British workers, and that they would have been much better off here than where they were. It is not so easy now; other nations, more sensible than we, have already skimmed the cream. But it would still be possible, if we wished to do it. The real reason why we have not done it is that neither the government nor the public has sufficiently realised the importance of mobility. We have talked of the need for extra production without seeming to realise that it is more important to produce some things than to produce others, and that what we really need is more of some and less of others. So long as the real nature of our problem has been hidden, false nationalism and other obstacles have triumphed over common sense. How to get labour into the places where it is most urgently needed—that is the first function of an economic system. When we realise this, all our problems will be solved; but till then we shall continue to waste our resources, and to inflict miseries both upon ourselves and upon our neighbours.

Once we have got through the big readjustments demanded by the war and reconversion, the mobility of labour may well prove a much less difficult problem than it is now fashionable to think. Many people suggest that full employment makes labour less willing to move, but there is no evidence for this. On the contrary, full employment is more usually associated with an excessive turnover of labour, and it is not full employment but the universal shortage of houses that is at present holding down mobility. When there is a sufficient surplus of houses for a worker to feel confident of getting a house wherever he may move, the problem in full employment is more likely to be that labour is too mobile than that it is too little mobile. If by that time the wage structure has been revised to make equally difficult jobs equally remunerative; and if we have learnt the secret of having neither too much money nor too little, so that shortage in one part of the economy is always balanced by equivalent surpluses elsewhere (and *vice versa*); then the supply of labour should prove sufficiently responsive to marginal changes in the demands of different industries and places.

## CONCLUSION

We may summarise as follows:

(1) The smoothness with which the market economy functions depends on the extent to which resources are mobile; it is immobility that necessitates planning by direction.

(2) *Laisser-faire* leads to incorrect location; location must be planned in the social interest, and, in particular, in such a way as to facilitate easy mobility between trades.

(3) The acquisition of new skills must be made as easy as is possible.

(4) The wage structure needs to be planned in order that essential trades in which there is a shortage of labour should be made more attractive than other trades.

(5) Monetary equilibrium is also essential to mobility, so that the supply of labour may be responsive to marginal changes in the demands of different industries and places. The distribution of resources is governed principally by the distribution of the flow of money, which is disturbed equally by inflation and by deflation.

(6) The achievement of a high level of mobility is a long job; meanwhile our immediate problems must be solved by selective immigration.

## VII

# *The Social Control of Business*

IN the free market economy the activities of business men are controlled by the pressure of competition. It is competition that forces them to follow demand, competition that enforces efficiency, and competition that keeps profits low. In this, as in other respects, the market economy cannot do its job if it is checked by inflation, for inflation creates a sellers' market, removes the control of demand, encourages waste, and causes profits to rise faster than wages. In this, as in all else, the first principle of planning is to have neither too little nor too much money in circulation.

If the level of monetary circulation is just right profits will be 'normal', that is they will be no more than is needed to induce business men to offer full employment. The word 'normal' carries no moral significance. Socialists think that the level of profits that is necessary to ensure full employment is too high, and gives to business men too large a share of the national income for what they do. They are then tempted to reduce profits by raising wages. But, as we have already seen in Chapter II, raising the general level of money wages merely raises the general level of prices. And if prices are controlled and wages raised relatively to them we both cause unemployment and distort the structure of production. The smooth way to increase wages relatively to profits is to put low taxes on wage earners and high taxes on large and on unearned incomes. The income tax is a wonderful invention because it does the same job that the trade unions wish to do without the evil results, for the simple reason that it does not enter into costs, and so has only small effects on entrepreneurial decisions as to employment. And also, more fundamentally, the way to reduce profits, in the long run, is to ensure equality of opportunity. If everyone in the community had the same sort of opportunities

of becoming an entrepreneur, business men would not earn more than anyone else. The way to control profits is to subject business men to as much competition as possible.

These wider issues we have already discussed. What concerns us in this chapter is only what happens within the framework of normal profits; for even on this narrower ground the claims of competition do not pass unchallenged. Its enemies assert first that it is not fully effective in spurring business men to efficiency, secondly that their response to it is frequently on the contrary to behave wastefully, thirdly that competition is ruinous, and fourthly that it is in any case self-destructive.

#### PRODUCTIVITY

Efficiency depends in the first place upon research, and upon its application. Competition stimulates research, but since only the largest firms can afford fundamental research, the result, in some industries, is to increase the advantages of large firms and to diminish the prospects of competition; and in other industries predominantly small scale, the result is that little research occurs. One remedy for both of these is cooperative research, which has been officially sponsored and assisted in this country for the past thirty years. Everyone agrees that cooperative research should be on a larger scale, and many think that every firm should be made to contribute, since all may benefit, and that as much emphasis as possible should be placed on cooperative at the expense of private research, so that new knowledge may be made available to all.

The imperfection of competition also reveals itself in the coexistence of firms differing widely in efficiency. Doubtless there is a tendency, in the long run, for the more efficient to drive the less efficient out of business, but it is even better, and may be quicker, to increase the efficiency of the latter by instruction. In agriculture, normally a most competitive industry, no one believes that competition alone is adequate to ensure efficiency; there is, on the contrary, in every country an elaborate system of advisory services placed at the farmer's disposal, and subsidised from public funds. Industry needs such services no less.

We have selected here only two of the services which a 'Development Council' might usefully supervise, and for which



funds may justifiably be levied compulsorily upon industries. It is not, naturally, easy to get such councils accepted; the bigger and more efficient firms see no gain to themselves, but only the expense of levies and the prospect of more effective competition; the smaller firms often do not feel the need for the services they are to be offered; and existing associations resent the intrusion of new bodies. It may seem useless to force upon industries services which they have determined to resist; but, once the deed is done, and the services become available, resistance frequently ends, and the new institution is accepted, and if it proves its worth, is eventually proudly cherished.

We have become aware recently how much productivity could be increased with existing plant and labour, simply by improving the organisation of work in the factory. There is partly a matter of improving management, through the training schemes and the advisory services of development councils. But it is also partly a matter of securing the agreement of workers to discontinue restrictive practices, tacit or expressed.

Production would increase if workers would work harder. This is quite a different issue. There is no case for trying to force people to work harder, or to work longer hours. Doubtless if they did they would have a higher standard of living, but they would also have more wear and tear and less leisure, and the purpose of life is not to wear oneself out in toil for material standards. Doubtless, too, if full employment were removed, and the insecurity and fear of dismissal hung once more over the workers' heads, they could be driven in many directions. But it is not consistent with democracy to force people to have a higher material standard by holding a whip of fear over their heads. If full employment causes productivity to fall, then this is part of the case for full employment, and not of the case against it; for it emphasises that it is only in full employment that the workers get a real choice between extra income and extra leisure. All the speeches urging the workers to work harder are so much wasted breath. The fact is that the workers on the whole do not like the sort of jobs they have to do, and when they get the chance to take things easy, which is presented by higher hourly earnings and by full employment, they take it. Those of us who have 'cushy' jobs—politicians, professors, clergymen, newspaper editors and the like—may think that this

is wrong; but it is only natural, and no amount of preaching is going to change it.

The real issue is not to get people to work more or harder, but to get their agreement to working more effectively. Through fear of unemployment the workers have imposed many restrictions—on the number of machines each worker shall tend, on the introduction of new machines, on the use of incentive wage systems, on the maximum daily output per worker (usually only by tacit agreement) and so on. These will disappear when the workers are fully convinced that full employment has come to stay, but not till then. Those who grumble because our productivity is low should determine all the more to maintain full employment, which alone in due course will make possible the most effective use of our resources.

Progress in this sphere depends also on the internal atmosphere of the business unit. The worker will give his best only if he identifies himself with his working unit, and has towards it sentiments of pride and of loyalty. This is largely a matter of the persona' relations between management and managed, but it depends also to some extent on securing to workers some participation in management. The importance of this is both exaggerated and underestimated. In a large firm the vast majority can play little part in management; the workers may elect delegates, but the workers are by definition so numerous and the delegates so few that the election interests only the active minority. What is missing in the large firm is personal contact between management and managed, and for this participation in management through delegates is but a poor substitute. On the other hand, it can be better than nothing, especially if a large measure of decentralisation is possible, so that the units of decision are numerous; then there can be numerous opportunities for worker participation, and correspondingly more delegates. Experience shows that, once the atmosphere is right, all questions of internal discipline, punctuality, absenteeism and so on can safely be left to the workers themselves to regulate, through their committees, and that there is no part of the managerial problem which does not become easier if the workers are taken into full consultation. There have also been striking results in the U.S.A. from giving the workers a fixed share of sales, basing this on the fact that the

share of wages in production changes very little, either in short periods, or over many years; when the workers know that they get a fixed percentage of what they produce (the appropriate figure varies from industry to industry, according to the importance of raw materials and of amortisation of plant), however much or however little they may produce, their attitude to their work becomes very different from what it is when they are working for fixed wages. In this and other ways we may seek to create a sense of community and responsibility in the industrial unit, so that men may take a full pride in the work that they do.

In all this we are still at the stage of experiment, and the best contribution that a government can make is to experiment in its own nationalised undertakings and so try to give a lead to private industry. This is not a field where legislation is very helpful, since success depends primarily on good personal relations. Moreover if worker participation in management really increases productivity, the firms that practise it will, in competition, make headway at the expense of those that do not; and, in full employment, the reluctant firms will be ground between this competition and the strong bargaining pressure of workers seeking in collective agreements to secure fuller participation. An enormous increase in productivity is possible as soon as the workers become interested in this subject and start bringing pressure to bear on the less efficient firms to improve their methods.

In this sphere the major responsibility rests with the trade unions. The lead they have given to the working classes in the past has been restrictive and destructive. They have sought to protect vested interests because the insecurity of the economic system gave such protection the first priority. If we can demonstrate that full employment has really come to stay, and also that extra production will not be used just to make the rich richer, the engines can be reversed. The rank and file can learn to take a pride in output, and energies now distorted and frustrated can be released and directed to the great task of abolishing poverty by producing more. Trade unionists can become authorities not only on wages and conditions, but also on managerial techniques and on productivity, and can bring their great pressure to bear on inefficient firms that are wasting

men's labour. Collective agreements may come to include important clauses binding the employer to use up-to-date methods. Joint production councils, which are in danger of being no more than a drag on industry as long as working class leaders are not really interested in questions of production and have little to contribute on them, can spring to life, and really do the job for which they are designed. We are still a long way from this, but it must clearly be our objective.

#### WASTEFUL COMPETITION

In all that we have discussed so far, competition is working in the right direction; that is to say, however slowly, it is working on the side of efficiency. It may, however, work the other way when markets are imperfect. For then the seller, instead of trying to sell as cheaply as possible, may rely instead on differentiating his product from that of his rivals. This differentiation may be costly. The consumer is inconvenienced if the absence of standardisation makes it difficult to secure spare parts and other accessories easily; marketing costs are high; firms are too numerous and too small; and factory costs are too high. Competition works well if it encourages more people to produce a standard article, but it begins to be costly when, through market imperfection, it results in differentiation of product.

There are forces at work in the market that restrain this process. If any manufacturer thinks that standardisation will greatly reduce cost, he is at liberty to take the plunge—it is this that made millionaires of men like Henry Ford. And if it is an article in daily common use, the growth of large scale retailing—the Woolworths, the multiple shops and so on—provides an outlet for orders by the million. With most of the things in common use the market forces are strong enough to exploit all the economies of mass production. Where the case is more doubtful is with articles that are as yet within the reach only of the middle and upper classes, where there is good technical reason to think that costs would fall greatly if production were standardised. The motor car is an outstanding English example, but there are also a few others, such as refrigerators or television sets.

There is also a case against standardisation, namely that it puts a straight jacket upon an industry, and checks the speed at which new improvements can be introduced. This applies equally to 'utility' specifications, and to proposals that Government departments should place large bulk orders for resale to retailers; though in truth no more harm is done by government standardisation than is done by the standardisation imposed by securing a mammoth Woolworth order, provided that the government's specification is as responsive to changing conditions as is Woolworth's. The moral is that compulsory standardisation should be applied sparingly, and flexibly, in such a way that new ideas and new designs can still be introduced and find scope for experimental use and improvement. Standardisation should not be applied where technical progress is fairly rapid, and should not be applied where it may have adverse effects on export trade. The best agency for deciding when to effect compulsory standardisation is a Development Council representing all sections of the industry and the public.

It is the absence of standardisation that causes excessive expenditure on advertising and sales promotion, and if the root cause is controlled there is no need for special action to deal with effects. Where compulsory standardisation is desirable and is applied, further control of sales promotion activities will not be necessary. Where standardisation is not desirable it is *ipso facto* desirable that the existence of a wide range of varieties should be made known, and therefore expenditure on sales promotion is in the public interest. If special restrictions of sales promotion are considered desirable, they should be left to voluntary arrangement at the instance of Development Councils.

Absence of standardisation is also the secret of waste in wholesale and retail distribution. The large organisations in distribution, such as the multiple shops and the co-ops, flourish by concentrating on a limited range of articles and doing a big trade in them; while the inefficiency of some of the small retailers is due to their trying to cover too wide a range. Progress in distribution will occur both through the further extension of large scale retailing at the expense of small scale and through the improvement of the latter. Experience in the U.S.A. shows that the key to the success of small scale retailing

is cooperation; taking the form of cooperation between a number of independent retailers and a wholesaler to ensure the fullest benefits of standardisation and bulk-buying; this system has worked wonders in the U.S.A. for the small retailer, and could do the same here. But retailers will not adopt it so long as there is available to them the alternative but illusory protection of resale price maintenance, which, in so far as it fixes a minimum price below which goods must not be sold, has been one of the principal sources of waste in retailing. This system should be prohibited by law. The small retailers would then have to set to work to improve their efficiency by legitimate means, especially by cooperation in buying and merchandising, and one of the restraints which now prevent the expansion of efficient forms of retailing would be removed. The special interest of socialists is of course in the further expansion of the consumers' cooperative movement. This movement is disappointing in the sense that the trade it does is not commensurate with its membership of over 10 millions, for the simple reason that the members do not find their own shops competitive except in a small part of the retail trade. This should be a standing challenge to the movement, but it is not, because the leaders of the movement seem more anxious to increase the number of names in membership books than to widen the range of goods which existing members find competitive. To the socialist the reform of distribution must mean first the reform of the consumers' cooperative movement. This is a difficult task, and to discuss it fully would take us beyond our terms of reference, which is the sphere of government planning. We can say only that if the movement cannot be reformed in such a way that it becomes competitive and secures the larger part of retail trade, the Government must look to the development and extension of other forms of mass retailing in the spheres where the cooperative movement is failing.

#### RUINOUS COMPETITION

The general level of profits, we have already seen, depends not on competition but on the circulation of money. Profits are low if there is less than full employment, high if there is inflation, and normal at full employment. Competition cannot

be ruinous either to profits or to wages so long as the monetary circulation is right.

This, however, refers only to general levels. Competition can be ruinous to particular groups in the sense that it causes their earnings to fall far below the general level; in doing this it must raise the earnings of other groups, but the fact that others are better off is not of much consolation to the particular group ruined by competition.

This phenomenon of ruinous competition, driving some earnings below the general level, is the result of immobility. If resources were not immobile, their owners would not remain in the group that is subjected to this strain; they would rapidly disperse elsewhere, and as the supply to this group diminished, earnings would return to normal. It is only when resources are very immobile and subjected to a large adverse change that the phenomenon of ruinous competition appears. Between 1920 and 1939 many of the old staple industries of Britain suffered this fate, especially coal, cotton, steel, shipbuilding, and agriculture.

If the immobile resources are left to their fate they will eventually disperse elsewhere—the more rapidly if the circulation of money is adequate to provide full employment for all (the long drawn out process in Britain between the wars was due less to immobility and more to the absence of a full employment policy). But if they are very immobile, special measures are required. In the first place, we can no longer tolerate the spectacle of citizens subjected to years of agonising ruin simply because demand for their services has altered, without doing something to bring their agony to an end. In the second place, it is wasteful for resources to remain where they are not very valuable, and we should facilitate their transfer. And in the third place a long drawn out agony is literally ruinous to an industry. It may be that only 10 per cent of resources is in excess, but the whole industry makes losses, funds are not set aside for renewing and improving the 90 per cent of plant that is needed, and the industry falls behind technically; at the same time young men avoid the industry; its age structure is distorted; and it acquires an evil reputation which works against new recruitment when the state of surplus gives way to that of shortage. All our old industries, now short of labour and

burdened with obsolete equipment, are suffering from having been too long left to the agonies of ruinous competition.

The industry's own remedy in this situation is to end competition. If supplies are restricted by quota, prices can be fixed high enough to give reasonable profits and wages; they can even be fixed high enough to give abnormal profits, though in practice there is no danger of this. The objection to this solution of the problem is that it does not deal with the fundamental cause of trouble, which is the excess of immobile resources. What is needed is a scheme to facilitate mobility, and though it is justifiable in the meantime to prevent earnings from falling to ruinous levels, the emphasis should be on mobility, and protection should be the subsidiary and temporary part of the scheme.

#### MONOPOLY

At the other extreme we get the case where a particular group is able to receive abnormal earnings, which, if there is neither inflation nor deflation, must be at the expense of the rest of society. This again is due to barriers to mobility. The abnormality may be temporary. If there is a sudden increase in demand or fall in supply the group may receive abnormal earnings until such time as extra resources are drawn in and prices and earnings fall to normal level. If the commodity is essential we may then have price control and rationing, and, if we are sensible, also special inducements to facilitate mobility and restore supply to a normal level. In a competitive market supply will always expand, until demand is satisfied at a price equal to normal cost of production. We call monopoly the case where additional resources are prevented from flowing into the group and bringing earnings to a normal level.

The normal way to deal with monopoly is to remove the barriers to the flow of resources on which it depends. Where monopoly is due to denial of finance to competitors, the remedy is a finance corporation. Where it is due to securing price discrimination against rival suppliers, the remedy is to outlaw discrimination. If it is due to abuse of patents, to trade boycotts, to exclusive agreements, or other loopholes in the law, the remedy is to reform the law. This has been one of the purposes of American anti-trust legislation, and this part of the anti-trust



law has been highly successful. In this country we are proceeding more slowly; we are not passing general legislation outlawing monopoly practices, but shall investigate each industry, and make orders applicable only to one industry at a time. This slowness is due in part to believing that monopoly can be conquered simply by publicity; and that therefore when a practice is outlawed in any one industry business men will abandon it in all others without waiting for a commission to get round to them industry by industry. Such faith seems somewhat naive; sooner or later we too, in the U.K., will pass general laws outlawing monopoly practices.

But not all monopoly can be dealt with by changes in the law. For example, where monopoly is based on owning all the supplies of a mineral the law can do nothing to make competition. So also where the monopoly is based on the economies of large scale production. There are even cases where monopoly should be encouraged. This is so wherever it is thought that unified control is necessary in order to minimise costs; and also in a few cases where the market is small and the risks so great that no one will provide a supply unless given at least temporary protection.

Where competition cannot be enforced, or where monopoly is actually desirable, what we need is not attempts to promote competition, but the control of monopoly. This is done by legislation fixing prices or profits, laying down the conditions of supply, and establishing a controlling tribunal. It is not essential that monopolies be nationalised, and whether they be nationalised or not, the same machinery of control is needed in order to protect the public. Of such machinery there are many examples in all democratic countries, where there is long experience of public utility control. Democrats make much song and dance about monopoly, but to deal with monopoly is one of the easiest problems of planning.

#### CONCLUSION

We may summarise as follows:

(1) Efficiency demands research, advisory services, and some measure of standardisation. In Britain the best way to work for each of these is through Development Councils.

(2) Efficiency depends on enlisting the pride and cooperation of all the workers in a business unit. Government can give a lead by experimenting in nationalised concerns with worker participation in management and with new forms of wage contract.

(3) Ruinous competition should be prevented where resources are very immobile, and deliberate dispersal should be pursued.

(4) Monopolistic practices that prevent the free flow of resources should be outlawed.

(5) Monopolies based on the economies of large scale production, or temporary monopolies granted for special reasons, should be controlled as to price, profits and conditions of sale.

## VIII

# *Nationalisation*

THE nationalisation of industry is not essential to planning; a government can do nearly anything it wants to do by way of controlling industry without resorting to nationalisation, as in Nazi Germany. Nationalisation is merely one of the ways of achieving ends; better for some ends, and not so good for others. We may begin by classifying the reasons for which nationalisation has been advocated.

First, socialists have wished the state to confiscate the property of the rich. But nationalisation is not confiscation. In Britain when we nationalise we pay the owners the full value of their property so that they are no less rich after nationalisation than before. This is done for the excellent reason that everything is not being nationalised at the same time. If one is nationalising only certain industries it would be unfair to confiscate the property of their capitalists while leaving all other capitalists untouched. And it would also be unwise because other capitalists who expected their own turn to come would withdraw as much capital as possible from industries on the nationalisation list, while there was yet time, to the detriment of the efficiency of these industries. If the fear of future nationalisation is not to stop the wheels of industry, capitalists must know that they will be treated fairly when their turn comes, so that they may continue to keep their industries going until the state gets round to them. Compensation must not be unfair, and if it errs, should, for this reason, err on the generous side. Confiscation proceeds not by nationalisation, but by taxation, especially death duties and capital levies, which should be pursued whether nationalisation takes place or not.

Secondly, in recent years in this country nationalisation has come to be thought of as necessary where capitalists have not been putting enough money into an industry, as into the British coal, cotton, agricultural or steel industries between

1920 and 1939. Actually the real reason why capitalists put little money into those industries in that period was that the demand for their products was relatively small, for special reasons. If the British Government had owned the coal industry, or cotton, or the land in the 1920s and 1930s it would have been just as reluctant to invest new capital in them as were the private capitalists. There is, after all, no chronic tendency of capitalists not to invest; they put their money where prospects are brightest, and poured plenty into the land or coal in the years before 1920 before conditions abroad cast their blight upon the prospects of these staple industries. It is not necessary to nationalise steel or the land in order to get capital invested in them. All the capital that is wanted will flow in if prospects are bright, and if the government wants capital to flow in even though prospects are uncertain (a decision which it should not take lightly) it has only to guarantee the market for the product, or to guarantee debenture payments, or, as it has done in the cotton industry, to offer an outright subsidy.

Thirdly, nationalisation has been advocated by socialists who have objected to the proletariat working for private employers who own the means of production. In olden days when the scale of production was very small the workers could own their own instruments of production, and it is much pleasanter to work for oneself than to work for someone else. But nationalisation does very little to solve this problem. What early socialists demanded was not nationalisation but cooperative production—the mines would be handed over to the miners as their own property, to run them as they pleased on a cooperative basis. British socialists have now rejected this conception; the mines, or any other nationalised property, are to belong to the public, who will employ the miners, and the essential relation is not changed by the change of ownership. It is of course very desirable that in nationalised enterprises the workers shall participate fully in management, and be treated with the fullest human dignity, but this is just as necessary in private industry, and is not, in fact, any easier to achieve in nationalised industries than it is in private industries, given in each case that the owner of the property, public or private, is retaining and protecting certain rights. We have to do everything that we can, in public and private industry, to revolutionise the status of working

people; but if we rest too much of the case for nationalisation on this ground we shall only be bitterly disappointed.

We come on to more solid ground where nationalisation is advocated for an industry where efficiency depends on unitary control. A good example of this is the ownership of mineral rights. When mining rights are owned by thousands of small landowners, each of whom may grant a mining licence to whatever company he pleases, the working of the mineral underground is seldom performed economically; companies are too small, and their boundaries bear no relation to geological conditions. There is a similar case for *land* nationalisation, where the existing pattern of ownership is causing farms to be uneconomic in size and shape, or frustrating town or country planning. The telephone service is also another example, because of the advantage of having all the subscribers in an area on the same system; and so is the generation of electricity, because of the advantage of pooling reserves. Still another important class are industries where standardisation would bring substantial economies, where such standardisation is being frustrated by the existing pattern of ownership. Of these the most important example in this country is *the motor car industry*. Also in this category we must include industries where excessive use of selling or buying agents by rival firms causes great waste, as is alleged to be the case with *insurance* in this country, and with *the marketing of agricultural produce* in many backward countries.

Unitary control is not the same as nationalisation; it becomes part of the case for nationalisation only because it involves monopoly, and then it merges into the general case for nationalising monopolies, whether they are based upon a need for unitary control or not, because it is desirable that monopolies be subjected to public control. Nationalisation is not the only possible form of control. Monopolies can be controlled by setting up a tribunal to fix their prices, or by controlling their profits, or laying down conditions of service as has been done here and elsewhere for generations with gas, railways, and other public utilities. Neither does nationalisation even make it possible to evade having to have these types of control, because it is just as necessary to have these controls over public as over private monopolies. The only thing that nationalisation

adds is the right to appoint the directors. This is an important right, and one that it is necessary for the state to be able to exercise over all industries that play an important part in the economy. This is a vague phrase admittedly; it applies not to consumer goods industries, but to monopolistic industries which supply services widely used by other industries, such as railways, *steel, banking, or chemicals*. It is not for nothing that the capitalists in these industries are usually looked up to by other capitalists as the great lords of capitalism, and given positions of responsibility wherever spokesmen are needed to represent the general interests of the class. These positions wield great power, and it is right that those who hold them should be nominated by the public and be answerable to the public.

In so far as the purpose of nationalisation is the control of monopoly, nationalisation need not itself be monopolistic, except in those cases where unitary control is essential to efficiency. An industry can be controlled by nationalising a part of it, just as private monopolists frequently exercise leadership and control of an industry even though their own firms may supply well under half the output. This is important first because it makes it unnecessary to try to draw the line very precisely in defining the industry to be nationalised. The important thing is to nationalise all or enough of the big firms to secure control. Neither does it matter if the firms one nationalises have interests in processes or industries outside the range of special interest. There is no reason why these should not be kept even if it means participating in other industries which are largely in private hands. There is a case for having some private firms in industries mainly nationalised, to act as a check on the efficiency of the public firms, and to provide an outlet for ideas which the public firms might suppress (this is particularly important in a country dependent on foreign trade). And equally there is a good case for public firms in many industries that are largely in private hands, to serve similarly as a yardstick and as an opportunity for experiments. The government should have power to start or to buy firms by private contract in any industry for this purpose. Partial nationalisation has many advantages over complete nationalisation of an industry.

It is also desirable that, except where there are special advantages in unitary control, the public sector of an industry should be decentralised as much as possible, to the extent of being administered by several independent corporations instead of by a single corporation. There is a case for having several B.B.Cs instead of one, and several Coal Boards. Decentralisation is desirable in the interest of efficiency, because enormous corporations are difficult to administer from a single centre. It is also necessary if the participation of workers in management is to be real, for if the decisions are all made at the centre very few can participate; the greater the number of points at which decisions are made, the greater the number of workers that can be drawn in, and the greater the sense of participation and of loyalty. This is specially important because it is the duty of public corporations to give a lead in promoting a new atmosphere of cooperation in industry. And thirdly, decentralisation is necessary in the interest of democracy, which is always endangered by the concentration of economic power in a few hands, whether the persons exercising it are nominated by a Minister or not. Nationalisation of monopolies is frequently desirable, but it is not desirable that nationalisation should be an instrument for increasing monopolisation.

Finally there is nationalisation as an administrative technique to facilitate some control not itself necessarily connected with the industry nationalised. For example taxes are easiest to collect when the goods taxed pass at some point through the hands of a small number of people, and most difficult to collect when there are many producers selling direct to many consumers without the intervention of a concentrated middleman channel. A government determined to tax, in such a case, may give itself a monopoly of compulsory wholesaling. There are many circumstances in which a government may find it useful to have a monopoly of wholesaling, or, if not a monopoly, at least a substantial share; e.g. in foreign trade, to give effect to bulk contracts, either of purchase or of sale, or to control closely either the quantity or the price or the source or direction of imports or of exports; or in home trade, to be able to promote standardisation by giving bulk orders. To control the wholesale trade is frequently one of the most effective ways of controlling an industry.

Nationalisation, then, is frequently desirable. There is no case for nationalising the whole economy. For nationalisation, when all is said, remains a form of monopoly, subject to all the usual disadvantages of monopoly. It is an improvement on private monopoly and desirable in industries that would in any case be monopolistic, but complete nationalisation should never be introduced in any industry which is not naturally or desirably monopolistic. The reasons for this are the usual reasons against monopoly; that it breeds inefficiency, stifles initiative and concentrates power. A country which depends on its export trade depends on being in the forefront with trying out new ideas, and cannot afford to create any kind of monopoly that is not necessary. And a country whose people love freedom will not wish the state to become the sole employer, through giant corporations. We must have some nationalisation, much more than we have already got (the most obvious candidates for future nationalisation have been mentioned in italics), but we must take each case on its merits, and know where to draw the line.

#### CONTROL

And when we do nationalise an industry and make it into a monopoly we need to provide for it as great a machinery of control as private monopolies require.

Long experience of public utility control points the way. First, there must be a tribunal with general control over prices charged and services offered to which customers can appeal, as to the old Railway Rates Tribunal and Railway and Canal Commission; every nationalised industry should have its tribunal (it is, for example, a serious omission from the nationalised coal industry). A further corollary of this is a price policy. Nationalised industries must pay their way, on a non-discriminatory basis, and must not be used either as a means of taxation, or as a means of subsidising favoured groups, however deserving; all this should be written into their statutes.

Next a consumers' council is useful, to watch over the interests of consumers, to bargain with the corporation, and to take to the tribunal general issues affecting not just a particular customer but customers as a group, e.g. the general level of prices. A most important function of such a council, also, is to



keep an eye on efficiency. Every public corporation should be made to publish detailed information about its costs (as the coal industry does, but not railways or electricity) so that the public may compare its costs with those of similar undertakings in other countries, and compare its parts one with another.

The responsibility for the conditions of the workers, and for seeing that the fullest opportunities are given for participation in management, for promotion, etc., falls upon the appropriate trade unions, whose rights in these spheres need to be specifically recorded in the corporation's charter. If the unions are not satisfied they will, of course, go to arbitration on matters of conditions, or report to the appropriate Minister.

The Minister and Parliament are both last and least in the machinery of control. They cannot be a substitute for the patient and detailed work that has to be done by a price tribunal, by a consumers' council, and by an arbitration board. Ministers should exercise very little control over corporations. Prices, services and conditions of labour are matters for special tribunals. Efficiency and good relations with workpeople are matters that he must review, either independently or at the instance of a consumers' council or of a trade union, since on them depends his judgment of the suitability of the directors he has appointed; and capital investment is clearly his concern. Once a year he should present to Parliament the report of the corporation, with the reports of the tribunal and the consumers' council, and a report from the Ministry of Labour on labour relations, and this should be almost the only occasion on which members of Parliament discuss the corporation's affairs. It will certainly be the only occasion that they have both the time and the relevant material to discuss them intelligently.

#### CONCLUSION

We may summarise as follows:

(1) Nationalisation is a form of monopoly. Partial nationalisation of industries is useful both as a check on private enterprise and as an outlet for experiment, and may be used widely, but complete nationalisation should be applied only where it is desirable to have a monopoly.

(2) A monopoly should be created wherever efficiency would be increased by bringing an industry under unitary control.

(3) Important monopolies, whether state-created or not, should be nationalised.

(4) The public sector of an industry should be decentralised as much as possible; several public corporations are better than one, except where there are special advantages in unitary control.

(5) In some cases government monopolisation of wholesale trade facilitates desirable economic planning.

(6) Nationalised monopolies should be controlled as closely as any others. Ministers and Parliament cannot achieve much. There should be a price and services tribunal, with a price policy laid down by law, a consumers' council, with access to cost accounts, and the usual machinery for labour arbitration.

## IX

### *How to Plan*

so far we have confined ourselves to governmental planning of that part of the economic system which is traditionally the sphere of private enterprise. Beyond this there is, of course, the traditional sphere of public enterprise, which even in the most *laissez-faire* country now usually absorbs about 20 per cent of the national income. We shall not discuss this sphere of planning because the need for such planning and its broad nature are beyond controversy. Everyone agrees that each government department has to decide what it is trying to do, and how and when it intends to do it, and this is all that planning involves—for education, defence, conservation of natural resources, town and country planning, the network of communications—for everything for which the government is responsible it must have a plan of its objectives.

Where planning the private sector and planning the public sector meet is that they both make claims on the national resources, and have therefore to be fitted into the budget for the whole economy.

This is the first stage of planning; on the one hand to estimate the amount of the national income at full employment, and on the other to fit into it the various calls for consumption, investment and public expenditure. In a democratic society the first of these items, consumption, is only to a limited extent within control; it can be expanded fairly easily, but the public resists attempts to restrict consumption, and though the government can reduce consumption by increasing taxation, it cannot restrict it very much below what people voluntarily wish to consume at full employment. This in turn sets limits to the sum of investment and public expenditure. The government can expand the one very easily at the expense of the other; but it cannot expand both beyond the limits set by the public's insistence on consumption without setting in motion the

forces of inflation, and producing disequilibrium in the foreign balance.

The master table in the annual plan is therefore that which estimates the national income for the coming year, and proposes its distribution between consumption, investment and public expenditure. The other tables follow from this, and merely translate it into detail.

The consumption table breaks up the global sum, and shows first how people would like to distribute their expenditure between different commodities and services. It then estimates how much of each of these commodities is likely to be available, from home production, from imports and from stocks, with a view to spotting major shortages and surpluses. The investment plan similarly distinguishes the projects that are to be undertaken; estimates the demands on various raw materials, types of plant, and types of labour; sets these demands against likely availabilities; and spots major surpluses and shortages. From these, four other sets of tables follow; a budget for each industry which seems likely to be in serious disequilibrium, a budget for each raw material that will be in short supply, setting demands against availabilities, a manpower budget, and a foreign trade budget.

These subsidiary budgets—for unbalanced industries, scarce raw materials, manpower and foreign trade—provide the crucial information needed at the second stage of planning, for they show where the gravest shortages will lie, and therefore where action is most needed. This action will be of two kinds. First, there will be action to increase supply; this is the most important kind of action, and the primary justification of planning. The secondary justification, and the second kind of action, which is needed only if supply cannot be expanded sufficiently to meet the demand, is to have some means of allocating the short supply, whether by price, or by quota.

This leads to the third stage in planning which is to estimate the equilibrium that these two types of action will achieve; that is to say, to fix the targets. The word target has recently been brought into disfavour by misuse. A target should not be a statement of what we should like to see achieved; that is the figure for demand, which appears in the tables at the second stage of planning. Neither is it the figure of what will be achieved if no action is taken; that is the figure of availabilities

also in the second stage. A target is the figure it is proposed to achieve as a result of the action that is contemplated. It is very important that this figure be estimated without illusions as to what is possible. For at this third stage these targets are used to make final allocations in the budgets for unbalanced industries, scarce raw materials, manpower and foreign trade, and to make the final adjustment to the figure for public expenditure in the master plan, which in turn adjusts the other items in that plan. If the targets are fanciful, the whole plan will be fanciful. And this is as true whether the targets are too large or too small. Planners who promise more than they can perform throw everything out of gear, so that the economy might just as well not be planned at all. On the other side there are the planners who take a pride in being able to claim over-fulfilment of their plans, and who therefore deliberately put forward targets that they know to be too low, or else over-fulfil their targets by robbing other essential industries of labour and materials. These are just as big a nuisance, and make just as much of a mockery of planning. Over-fulfilment is just as much a sign of bad planning as is under-fulfilment.

But, of course, however good one's guess may be, and however well planned the measures for achieving the plans, 100 per cent fulfilment is impossible. Over large items the planners have but small control—the prices of imports, the volume of exports, the output of agriculture—and over others all they can hope to do is to exercise an influence in the right direction. Moreover on many basic questions our information is woefully inadequate. Statistics of the British economy are primitive compared with those relating to the U.S.A. and a considerable improvement in both the quantity and the quality of our statistics is needed if economic policy is to be intelligent and precise. At present the best we can do is to try to exercise an influence in the right direction, but this is of course a very important thing to do, and the fact that the figures proposed are never those that are achieved does not make them any the less useful. The purpose of these figures is to indicate the major problems likely to arise, and to enable us to act consistently as far ahead as we can see. We shall know more tomorrow than we know today, but that is no reason for not trying to be as consistent and as intelligent as possible in what we have to do today.

The real moral is that planning must be flexible. In part this means that the ideal is to revise the plans continuously, but this is an impossible ideal to achieve. We should try to achieve it as much as we can, and no doubt, in the event of major unforeseen changes—a slump, a good harvest or a big change in supply or demand—the relevant budgets will be altered. The budgets, however, are all relevant; they all hang together, and if one is changed the whole lot should be changed, and this is a big job which cannot be done several times a year. This is where planning through the market becomes so far superior to planning by direction. For the market itself is a most flexible instrument. If, for example, efforts to increase supply are over-successful, the price will fall, and these efforts will be automatically counteracted, and the surplus automatically absorbed. The planners are not thereby absolved from changing their plans to meet changing conditions, but the consequences of error and delay are less if they plan through the market than if they plan by direction.

A further corollary is that one cannot plan very far ahead. A five year plan cannot be more than a vague indication of aspirations. The national income in five years' time depends first on what happens to productivity. Before the war productivity in this country increased at a rate of about 3 per cent per annum; today it is below the pre-war level, and no one knows whether in five years' time it will be 10 per cent less than pre-war or 30 per cent above pre-war. How can one plan a national income within limits of error so wide that they can swallow up the whole allocation to investment, or to public expenditure, or to exports, or to any major industry? Again the national income five years from now will depend on the terms of trade and the demand for exports, which may affect the balance of payments 20 per cent either way. One must plan five years ahead all those parts of the economy which need five year plans—afforestation, power stations and so on—and one can usefully plan specific investment projects, but a *general* five year plan for the whole economy is no more than a game. One plans for as far ahead as one can see—and this means that even an annual plan must be subject to review.

The fourth stage in planning, when the targets have been drawn up, is to publish the budgets in which they are embodied,

with as much data as the public needs in order to understand and to criticise what the government is trying to do. This needs no argument in a democracy, but is nevertheless most vital if planning is to be not a substitute for democracy but an instrument which the public uses to get what it wants. It is not for the government to decide how much we shall invest, or how large an adverse balance of payments we should plan for, or what is the right order of priorities for allocating steel, any more than it is for the government to decide the provisions of the company law or the right age for leaving school. In all these matters the Government must present its proposals to the public, and final acceptance or rejection must lie with Parliament. It is perfectly true that in practice the public can only criticise; it cannot submit a whole new alternative plan, because all the various parts of a plan must hang together, and a new plan can only be made self-consistent by a team of experts. But this is just as true of Parliamentary control over foreign policy, or defence, or the company law, or the government's own budget. All the provision now made for presenting, debating and controlling the government's budget should in future be made for presenting, debating and controlling the economic plan of which the government's budget is only a part.

The documents presented to the public at this stage should show not only what targets are proposed, but also how the government proposes to achieve them. For the sixth and final stage of planning is actually to put into operation the measures which are to achieve the targets. Neglect of this stage makes all that has gone before a farce. To draw up and publish a list of targets is not to plan; the real planning comes when the government takes action to realise these targets. This action, as we have seen, is of two kinds, action to increase supply and action to reduce demand (or *vice versa* if it is not a shortage but a surplus that is in question). Governments frequently take action to reduce demand, but are not so good at taking action to increase supply. They try to plan by exhortation, making speeches urging people to produce more, or to ask themselves whether the job they are doing is vital, and so on, but in fact have no plans, whether of inducement or of direction, to shift resources into the right places. They are then surprised and

hurt, at the end of the year, when their plans have not been fulfilled, and they make still more speeches. Planning by exhortation is not planning.

#### REVIEW

We may conclude by reviewing the principal shortcomings of economic planning in this country in the past three years.

But first we must set the matter in perspective. It is not the case that bad planning has hindered the recovery of this country, and caused us to fare worse than unplanned countries. For we have not in fact fared worse than unplanned countries; on the contrary we have done as well and better. Production has grown as rapidly since the end of the war in the U.K. as it has in the U.S.A. Compared with pre-war years the U.S.A. has far outstripped us, but this is primarily because there were ten million unemployed in the U.S.A. when war broke out, who have now been absorbed. At the time of writing (mid-1948) industrial production is about 20 per cent above pre-war, and agricultural production still larger. There is no other country in Europe affected by the war that can claim such progress—least of all those that have been pursuing *laissez-faire* policies. We could have planned better; but the suggestion that we would have done better if we had planned less has no more value than the statement that others who have planned less have done better than we have, which is made to support it, and which is patently contrary to the facts.

The first shortcoming has been a failure to get labour correctly distributed between industries. We are producing a lot, but too much of the less essential and too little of the more essential. The acid test of this is the failure year after year to realise the targets set in the manpower budget. The major consequence is not enough of the goods that could fetch good prices abroad, especially coal and textiles; consequently a shortfall of exports, restrictions on imports, and continued rationing. The cause of this failure has been reliance on planning by exhortation, instead of taking positive measures to induce movement into the essential trades, and failing this to fill up by immigration. If a ban were placed on ministerial speeches (which seldom do good and often do harm) ministers would have to ask themselves what positive steps they could take to achieve their



targets now that mere talk was ruled out, and the efficiency of our planning would improve beyond recognition.<sup>1</sup>

The second shortcoming has been in foreign trade policy, where we have tried to stabilise both the internal and the external value of the pound simultaneously with disastrous consequences for the terms of trade—the U.K. is the only European country against whom the terms of trade have moved since 1938, and if we now enjoyed the same terms as in 1938 the adverse balance would now be negligible.

The third shortcoming has been the pursuit of an inflationary policy, which has raised profits, strained price and raw material controls, dissipated stocks, impeded production, made it difficult to get labour for essential trades, and drawn heavily on our reserves of foreign exchange. The complaint of excessive restrictions, licences, forms and so on has largely followed from this. Inflation puts such a strain on the price mechanism that it becomes necessary to pile on more and more restrictive controls. Happily this phase is now over.

No government can be perfect. There are many other planning errors that have been made, such as slowness in taking steps to increase the productivity of private enterprise, failure to reform the income tax and to impose a capital levy, the passing of inadequate legislation for monopoly control, and the absence of adequate safeguards of the public interest in nationalised industries; but at the present moment these are minor in comparison with the three major errors. That the Government should have made just these errors is a natural outcome of the history of the Labour Party. To socialists in the past, planning has been concerned principally with the distribution of income and with the nationalisation of industry; that is to say principally

<sup>1</sup> This paragraph was written in mid-1948. Publication of the *Economic Survey for 1949* while this book was in proof has shown that Ministers have reacted in exactly the opposite way to that suggested above. Having found that targets cannot be hit simply by exhortation, they have now ceased to set targets. Where there are shortages the only 'planning' that is to be done is to ration demand, and even the pretence of planning to eliminate shortages is now dropped. The fact that we still have a lopsided economy is admitted, and also the fact that this lopsidedness costs us dearly in shortages of essential commodities. But the effort to get our resources properly distributed is nevertheless abandoned. Even anti-planners have been shocked by this abdication of an important duty.

It is also to be noted that the budgets for commodities which are still in short supply and still rationed have not been published, so that the public may see, discuss and criticise the basis on which allocations are made. This violates the important principle that planning must be open if it is to be democratic.

with the subject matter of our chapters II and VIII and not with the subject matter of the intervening chapters. Socialist planning has had no principles for dealing with money, investment, foreign trade, mobility, or private enterprise. It is therefore natural that a Labour Government should devote itself with gusto to the subject matter of Chapters II and VIII, and should flounder rather helplessly with everything else. Unfortunately for the government, the standard of living of the workers is much more intimately affected by these other matters; they ought to have a much greater priority in socialist planning than either income distribution or nationalisation, and the fact that a Labour Government always neglects them (exactly the same thing happened in 1929-31) is a tragedy both for the country and for Labour Governments, who are always defeated by just those economic matters that they neglect. Time spent in 1945-47 proudly nationalising the Bank of England, Cable and Wireless, civil aviation or the railways (all desirable measures in themselves) would have been much better devoted to getting labour into the right industries, or to working out policies that would conserve our foreign reserves, for in the hierarchy of planning these are clearly of incomparably greater importance. The greatest lessons that planners have to learn are that nationalisation and the distribution of income are only a small part of the matters that claim their attention; and that when we cannot do everything we must put first things first.

## Appendix I

### *On Economic Union*

ECONOMIC union between adjacent countries is widely canvassed today for two reasons. The first is to facilitate discrimination against the United States of America and its deflationary export surplus. Such discrimination, as we have seen, is very desirable, but economic union is rather a big project to use in order to achieve it. The simplest way to bring about this discrimination is for nations to make a joint demand on the United States to appreciate the dollar; or alternatively to effect a joint depreciation of non-dollar currencies. Or discrimination can be effected simply by agreeing to cut dollar imports as much as possible, while relaxing controls on imports from non-dollar sources.

The more important and permanent case for economic union is that, in reducing obstacles to trade, it widens the market and promotes international specialisation. Opponents of union point out that this is not always advantageous to the countries concerned. For example, suppose that before union A and B buy a certain commodity from C, and that after union between A and B the industry is successfully established in A at the expense of C. If the natural economic advantages are heavily in favour of C, both A and B may be worse off for encouraging the industry to establish in A. This is perfectly true, but is not perhaps very important. For what is probable, in the absence of union, is not that the industry will be confined to C, but that both A and B will try to establish it at home under protection, and, compared with this situation, economic union which confines the protection to a large industry in A, is decidedly superior to the prospect of two smaller industries in A and B, both protected. Moreover, C's advantage frequently consists in nothing more than that C has a large market free of trade barriers, and if union does the same for A and B this 'unnatural' advantage disappears. There can be little doubt that

if the trade barriers between European countries were removed, all Europe would benefit immensely from the resulting stimulus to specialisation.

It must be emphasised that it is greater specialisation that is the principal benefit. Some people, for example, argue for union on the ground that it will permit greater 'coordination' of industries, by which they mean increased cartelisation. For example every European country is trying to have its own motor car industry, and this is clearly wasteful because the advantages of large scale operation in this industry are immense. If coordination means sharing out the market between the various national industries, through some form of international cartel, the effect will be pernicious. What we really need is that most of these national industries should be swept away, and the whole European market opened up to the product of a very small number of manufacturing centres.

Here lies the rub. Economic union is very difficult to bring about because it is bound to sweep away a great many national practices to which people cling. Let us consider the difficulties systematically.

First of all, what do we mean by economic union? The term covers many degrees of cooperation, and is very loosely used. The minimum requirement is that the currencies of the union should be freely interchangeable without restriction or licence; this does not itself imply union—it was the 'normal' relation between currencies for over a century—but it is the first step. Secondly the decision to free currencies is nullified if at the same time other trade barriers are raised, such as tariffs, or import quotas. The minimum requirement is an undertaking not to increase such barriers, and the union begins to have substance only if there is an undertaking to remove barriers, either immediately or in gradual but pre-determined stages.

When the union comes into effect two sets of problems at once emerge; those that affect particular industries and those that relate to trade in general.

Industries are affected because they lose their protection, or because the removal of barriers in other countries widens their markets. Omelettes cannot be made without breaking eggs, and increased specialisation cannot be achieved without destroying some existing trades. Governments must therefore be

ready with plans to move resources out of distressed industries to those that may now expand (including plans to move skilled workmen from one country to another, if this is desirable and if they want to go). But they must turn a deaf ear to suggestions for protection, or the union cannot come into existence. On the other hand they must be ready to remove artificial restraints or subsidies which they themselves have imposed. For example, if there is free trade between Britain and France there cannot be heavy excise duties on beer in Britain but not in France, or British brewers will take their industry to France. This means that all countries in the union must have the same structure of indirect taxation, and of subsidies to industries; union is not just a matter of currencies and tariffs.

The fact that the union destroys some industries is tolerable because it also expands others. But it does this only if it stimulates exports as much as imports, i.e. only if it does not lead to unbalanced trade. For example, if Britain and France now entered into union, Britain would have a heavy export surplus to France, and many French industries would be wiped out while very few would expand. This is because French prices are much higher than British prices. The next step towards union is therefore to bring the price levels of the countries concerned into line with each other. This is not difficult; we have only to find the right rate of exchange between currencies and to establish this rate before the union commences.

The great problem is then to keep the price levels in line in the future. A union cannot last long if one country is trying to stabilise prices and wages, like the U.K., while another is inflating, like France, and a third pursuing a deflationary policy, like Italy. Therefore economic union involves at least an agreement between all the countries concerned to pursue the same policy with respect to money, prices, wages, investment, and employment; and since it is difficult to carry out such an agreement, the logical end of economic union is to have a single government responsible for such matters.

The exception which proves this rule is the working of the sterling pool. Here we have a group of freely interchangeable currencies, without specific agreement to pursue a common economic policy, and indeed without any real similarity of policy. But in the first place the sterling group is not a full

economic union. Each partner is free to adopt, and does adopt, measures that partly nullify the free convertibility. Thus British farmers are not overwhelmed by cheap produce from the dominions because the United Kingdom does not permit unrestricted entry of produce even from countries within the sterling group; and free convertibility of currencies does not carry us far when the physical movement of goods is otherwise restrained. And in the second place, even with these restrictions the existence of free convertibility gives rise to problems that are solved only because the political ties existing between the members of the group permit much give and take. Three of these problems are outstanding. First, because sterling is inconvertible, several members of the group receive in return for their exports only an addition to their holdings of sterling, just as in economic union with France we would receive for exports a large holding of inconvertible francs; in the case of the sterling group, members are willing to hold sterling without complaint because of their affection for the United Kingdom, but in the case of economic union we should not be so willing to send exports to France in return for a holding of francs. Secondly, each member agrees to pool its dollar earnings, and the Treasury is allowed, in consultation, to determine how many dollars each member may spend. Malaya surrenders dollars to the sterling pool, and the United Kingdom also makes substantial contributions (proceeding from loans) for the benefit of other members of the group. Belgium might not feel so generous to other members of an economic union. Nevertheless it is essential in such a union that earnings of non-union currencies be pooled. Otherwise each country has the incentive to withhold its goods from union members and to direct its exports as much as possible say to dollar countries, thus frustrating the free movement of goods intended by the union. And thirdly, even in the sterling area movements of capital from one member to another give rise to anxieties, and are carefully watched. These difficulties are overcome in the sterling group because the members are prepared, because of their common membership of the Empire, to accept some sacrifice; and those members of the Empire which cannot afford the drain that would otherwise be upon them stay out of the group. In an economic union of Western Europe the difficulties would

be even more acute, because the economies of the countries are much more competitive (the sterling group countries are more complementary), and would therefore more urgently have to pursue similar economic policies; while on the other hand the will to give and take, which smoothes the working of the sterling area, would not be so pronounced.

It would be virtually impossible to carry on an economic union in Western Europe without having a political union with a central government responsible for economic policy. This is not a strange conclusion when we remember the problems presented by local authorities within a unitary state, or by state governments within a federation. If local authorities were free to pursue conflicting monetary policies a country would soon be in a mess. We recognise as an elementary principle of political economy, that if there is to be free movement of men, money and goods inside a country, whether unitary or federal, then there must be severe limits on the economic powers of subordinate authorities. We apply this principle even to the provision of social services. If one area has elaborate services and high taxes, while others have fewer services and smaller taxes, business is driven from the high to the low tax area, and this will be true whether the areas are Yorkshire and Lancashire, Pennsylvania and Illinois, or England and France. An economic union, in fact, will not long work smoothly unless it becomes a political federation, with the more important economic functions of government transferred from the state to the federal authority.

Now it is a pre-condition for this further stage that countries should agree broadly to pursue similar economic policies. A union between *laisser-faire* peoples is easy to achieve, because each of the peoples knows that the federal authority will pursue the same sort of economic policy that its own national government would have pursued. But a people that favours planning cannot live in the same federation with a people that favours *laisser-faire*. And even the peoples that favour planning cannot agree on a federation unless the types of planning that they favour are broadly similar.

The great obstacle to plans for economic union in Western Europe is the unplanned and unstable economy of France. So long as France continues to abandon herself to inflation all

other countries have to protect their economies against her, and there is not much hope of barriers coming down. But if France can pull herself together, and establish a strong administration, the main obstacle to economic union will fall away. For the principal countries of Western Europe have now all abandoned *laissez-faire* (all their political parties agree on this), and it would not be impossible (though it would not be easy) to reach agreement on the general lines of economic policy, and even to surrender some crucial economic powers to a federal authority. Or it may be, on the other hand, that participation in economic union is just what France needs to ensure a sound economic policy.

In the last analysis the success of economic union depends on the strength with which political union is desired. The difficulties are formidable, but once it comes to be realised that the very continuance of democracy in Western Europe depends on the nations finding military and political strength in unity, the economic obstacles will be seen to be of little importance.



## Appendix II

### *On Planning in Backward Countries*

PLANNING is at the same time much more necessary and much more difficult to execute in backward than in advanced countries.

In the first place, planning requires a strong, competent and incorrupt administration. It must be strong enough to be able to enforce its measures, such as to collect taxes from the peasantry, or to enforce a rationing system without black markets, measures which even so ancient a government as that of France has not found itself fully able to enforce. It must have a competent administrative service, with trained personnel, able to understand the large issues that are at stake, and to act reasonably and rapidly. And it must be free of all charge of corruption, since, whereas men will bear many restrictions from a government which they believe to be acting fairly and solely in the public interest (however mistakenly) without respect of persons, they will sooner or later resist violently measures which are corruptly administered, however acceptable the measures themselves may be.

Now a strong, competent and incorrupt administration is just what no backward country possesses, and in the absence of such an administration it is often much better that governments should be *laissez-faire* than that they should pretend to plan. This was indeed the essence of the case for *laissez-faire* made by eighteenth century writers, who saw the mess that was made by weak, incompetent and corrupt governments, and sought therefore to confine the activities of government within the narrowest practicable limits, so as to minimise the damage that they might do. The alternative approach was that of Lenin, who fully realised the impossibility of using a backward administrative service for planning, and who sought therefore to create, in his Communist Party, a highly trained and disciplined priestly order, on which he could rely to carry out his instructions.

At least we may say this: the first objective of planners must be to create an administrative machine that can do the work of planning; to train young men academically and in the tasks of administration, and to weed out mercilessly the incompetent and the corrupt. And, secondly, in the meantime no administration should be loaded with tasks more numerous or more delicate than it can handle; the quantity and forms of planning should be limited strictly within the capacity of the machine.

In backward countries governments have usually much leeway to make up in fulfilling the normally accepted functions of governments long before they get on to more controversial matters. The usual public works are usually in a deplorable state. Roads and communications have to be planned; rivers to be brought under control, to put an end to flooding, and utilised for irrigation and electric power; water supplies must be conserved, and pipes laid to bring water to reasonably accessible places; elementary public health measures are wanting, the draining of swamps, the control of infectious disease, the regulation of sanitation, the establishment of a public health service. Forests, schools, geological research, hospitals, courts, police—one could continue this list at length. City dwellers in Western Europe or the U.S.A. take for granted a vast network of government services which are absent or grossly inadequate in backward countries, and which it is the recognised first duty of governments to provide.

But the difficulty which faces these governments is that they cannot expand their own services unless they can raise money to pay for them, and they cannot raise all the money they need because their peoples are too poor. They are therefore driven to concern themselves with measures to increase the national income. This is the sense in which planning is more necessary in backward countries. In advanced countries the national income increases steadily from decade to decade even if the government does not 'interfere' in economic life. But in many backward countries there is either stagnation or retrogression, and a progressive government is naturally driven to enquire what plans it may make to bring about economic progress.

The crux of the problem is usually a backward system of agriculture—lack of scientific knowledge, poor equipment, inefficient marketing, insecure tenure, an uneconomically small

scale of operation, and, frequently also, rural overpopulation. There are recognised remedies—an agricultural extension service, cooperative and other provision of credit, cooperative and other reorganisation of marketing, legislation to protect the security of tenants—but they make little headway unless the interest and enthusiasm of the farmers is awakened and held. Once the farmers begin to desire progress almost all difficulties can be overcome, but so long as they are apathetic and uninterested very little can be done. The first task of progressive governments in the sphere of agriculture is to arouse the enthusiasm of their people for new knowledge and new ways of life. How to awaken and capture enthusiasm is the first problem in mass education. It is also politically the first task of new popular governments, and it is because only new popular governments can capture such enthusiasm that it is only in the countries which have had such governments that there has been substantial progress in agriculture among backward peoples in the last thirty years.

The most difficult of all the agricultural problems is the small size of holdings in peasant countries, frequently of five acres or less. All such countries have to go through an agrarian revolution at the end of which is some form of large scale agriculture, whether it be the capitalist farm, or the collective farm, or the state farm, or merely the family farm, working large areas with machinery but without hired labour. In the past an agrarian revolution has always been violent, even where, as in England, the violence may have been cloaked in Parliamentary forms. It remains to be seen whether popular governments can awaken sufficient enthusiasm for their mass education programmes to carry through such revolutions in future by consent. So far the omens are unfavourable. Popular revolutions have just the opposite result. Large estates are broken up into small uneconomic holdings sometimes not exceeding five acres, with disastrous effects on productivity. Techniques for combining democracy with large scale agriculture have still to be worked out.

Large scale agriculture usually requires fewer people per acre than small holdings, and therefore where the countryside is overpopulated and there are not enough new lands reclaimable by drainage or irrigation, it is not desirable to make an

agrarian revolution without providing new employment opportunities outside agriculture. An agricultural and an industrial revolution always go together, the first releasing the labour which the second draws off the land. Governments of backward countries have therefore to put into their agricultural programmes projects for industrialisation.

Since this problem is one of disguised unemployment it is sometimes suggested (for example by implication in the Bombay plan for India) that it can be solved, as is unemployment in industrial countries, simply by increasing the quantity of money. But this is not so. Suppose that the government starts to build roads, and creates the money to pay wages and salaries. In the first place, the propensity to import is very high; much of this money goes abroad to import food, clothes, bicycles and so on. There is then a strain on the balance of payments unless exports can be increased correspondingly, but this is not easy, and cannot be achieved even by devaluation. If it were achieved, the quantity of goods on the home market would be correspondingly reduced—the extra imports go to receivers of the new incomes, but receivers of old incomes have now to yield up part of the old produce to these same people and part for export, and so there is inflation created at home. The situation is then the same as if the government controlled imports and did not allow the new money to be spent abroad. This, in practice, is what it has to do; control of the exchanges is one of the first things planners have to do in backward countries because they are not able to expand exports adequately in view of their high propensity to import.

Control of the exchanges does not, however, solve the problem; the new money then circulates at home and forces prices up. In an industrial country this would cause entrepreneurs to take on labour, and output would expand rapidly. But in an agricultural country as likely as not when prices rise the farmers begin by consuming more of their own produce, thus reducing the amount available to the towns and raising prices still further. They next go to the towns with their extra money to buy imported goods, and on finding that these are now in short supply (because the circulation of new money has increased the demand but not the supply) they may return home and reduce their sowings. This, for example, is what

happened in Russia until agriculture was collectivised, and was one of the chief reasons why the Government was so anxious to bring the farms under its control. In an industrial country an increase in the quantity of money increases employment and output, but in an agricultural country, even when there is unemployment, open or disguised, an increase in the quantity of money frequently reduces output.

It follows that if governments of backward countries try to finance their investments by creating money they will cause inflation. Investment must be financed either by taxation, or by borrowing. In very backward countries the propensity to import is almost unity; that is, almost all extra income is spent on imports, and even local borrowing cannot finance investment unless the lenders either lend out of foreign reserves, or reduce their own demands on imports to the full extent of the propensity to import.

It also follows that more positive steps are needed than the mere creation of money if the unemployed are to be absorbed in productive enterprise. In an industrial country there are entrepreneurs eager to respond to the prospects of increased profits by installing new industrial enterprises and engaging workers. But in an agricultural country the enterprise and experience are confined to agriculture and to commerce. Moreover, because the 'external economies' are large in industrial production, small isolated factories seldom pay, and entrepreneurs will not easily establish in new areas when they have a choice of old areas already well supplied with cheap power laid on, with trained industrial labour, with information services, and with all the other accessories of a developed industrial centre. In these days if one wishes to develop secondary industries, one must do it on a large scale, and deliberately set out to create the facilities which factories use in common, and which cannot be provided cheaply on a small scale. That is why the trading estate, financed by government, is now the established technique for developing depressed areas. And it is also why, once an area has started to decline, it tends to decline cumulatively; and once it has started to expand, it tends also to expand cumulatively. Any backward country which wishes to encourage industrialisation—and they nearly all must if only as a part of their agricultural programme—must, as a minimum,

set about building a trading estate, and offering inducements to industrial entrepreneurs to set up in its territory.

Foreign capital cannot be avoided, even if the government decides to build and operate all the plants itself. The machinery must come from abroad, and the workers who build the factories, the roads, the factory workers' houses and so on will want to spend a large part of their wages on imported goods. Some foreign exchange can be found by using a strict exchange control to cut out all luxury imports, and to pare down even necessities; and by using what is thus saved to buy machinery. (There must be corresponding taxation or borrowing to mop up the incomes thus diverted to the home market, in order to prevent inflation.) But backward countries are too poor to be able to provide much capital simply by cutting down luxuries. If they are to industrialise substantially they have either to cut severely into the consumption of necessities, or else to borrow abroad. A ruthless dictatorship can cut consumption to the desired extent, but a democracy will always have to rely largely on foreign capital in its early stages of development.

The quickest way to ease the strain on the foreign exchanges, and to reduce the dependence on foreign borrowing, is to plan the new investment in such a way that its produce becomes rapidly available, and adds to exports or can be substituted for imports. Export industries have first priority. Next comes food. In most backward countries output is low partly because people are undernourished or malnourished. Investments which increase the output of food, such as by irrigation, or reclaiming lands, or increasing manuring or livestock, are of the greatest urgency, especially if they are such as to yield their results rapidly. There is also a high propensity to import food, so such investments quickly reduce the strain on foreign reserves. Then there are the clothing industries and building materials, which also have a high import propensity. Weaving, knitting and the making of clothes and of boots and shoes are simple industrial processes, and are always among the first to be developed. Building materials depend on the existence of suitable local earths and forests; where these are available they should be rapidly exploited.

Now industry cannot flourish if there are no industrial resources whatever in the territory—especially if there is no

source whatever of power—and however overcrowded an area may be, if it has no industrial resources it must seek other sources of employment—a tourist industry, a film industry, or failing all else employment in other lands that permit migration. Industry depends also on a sizeable home market. There are many areas that are very overcrowded, but which nevertheless have too small a total population to be able to support industry. The world will get into a mess if each small backward political unit embarks upon industrialisation. The remedy for most of these units is political and economic federation, which, by widening the market, increases specialisation, and makes it possible to develop economically.

There are also backward countries whose problem is not overpopulation but under-population, perhaps the classical example being the colony of Northern Rhodesia whose population of one and a half million is dispersed over an area three times the size of Great Britain. In such countries the problem is rather that of husbanding one's resources. To build roads, schools, waterworks and other capital goods all over the country would be much too costly. One must start in small areas, encourage the population to concentrate there, and move outward only as numbers increase. How to plan new settlements systematically is a subject as old as Gibbon Wakefield, and one in which new techniques have been developed in recent years, especially by the Dutch in the out islands of the former Netherlands East Indies. The problems here are quite different from those of the overpopulated backward areas.

It can thus be seen that planning in backward countries imposes much bigger tasks on governments than does planning in advanced countries. The government has to do many things which can in advanced countries be left to entrepreneurs. It has to create industrial centres, to put through an agricultural revolution, to control the foreign exchanges most strictly, and in addition to make up a great leeway of public services and of ordinary economic legislation. And all this has to be done through a civil service that is usually much inferior to that of an advanced country. Why then do backward countries take more readily to planning? Because their need is also so obviously much greater. And it is also this that enables them to carry it through in spite of error and incompetence. For, if the people

are on their side, nationalistic, conscious of their backwardness, and anxious to progress, they willingly bear great hardships and tolerate many mistakes, and they throw themselves with enthusiasm into the job of regenerating their country. Popular enthusiasm is both the lubricating oil of planning, and the petrol of economic development—a dynamic force that almost makes all things possible. We in the United Kingdom felt this during the war, and can understand the claims of Russia in the 1930s or of Jugoslavia today to have awakened this dynamic enthusiasm and to be conquering all things with it. Even the most backward country will progress rapidly if its government knows how to tap this dynamic force.

THE END



*By the same author:*

**Introduction To Development Planning**

**Economic Survey 1919-1939**

**Principles Of Economic Planning**

**The Theory Of Economic Growth**

**Overhead Costs**

**Politics in West Africa**

**Economic Sciences in Memory of Alfred Nobel 1979**

Theodore W. Schultz  
Sir Arthur Lewis

# **Sir Arthur Lewis**



## **AUTOBIOGRAPHY**

I was born in St. Lucia on January 23, 1915. My parents, who were both school teachers, had immigrated there from Antigua about a dozen years before. The islands were dissimilar in religion and culture, so our family had some slight characteristics of immigrant minorities.

My progress through the public schools was accelerated. When I was seven I had to stay home for several weeks because of some ailment, whereupon my father elected to teach me so that I should not fall behind. In fact, he taught me in three months as much as the school taught in two years, so, on returning to school, I was shifted from grade 4 to grade 6. So, the rest of my school life and early working life, up to age 18, was spent with fellow students or workers two or three years older than I. This gave me a terrible sense of physical inferiority, as well as an understanding, which has remained with me ever since, that high marks are not everything.

My father died when I was seven, leaving a widow and five sons, ranging in age from five to seventeen. My mother was the most highly-disciplined and hardest working person I have ever known, and this, combined with her love and gentleness, enabled her to make a success of each of her children.

I left school at 14, having completed the curriculum, and went to work as a clerk in the civil service. My next step would be to sit the examination for a St. Lucia government scholarship to a British university, but I would be too young for this until 1932. This job was not wasted on me since it taught me to write, to type, to file and to be orderly. But this was at the expense of not reading enough history and literature, for which these years of one's life are the most appropriate.

In 1932 I sat the examination and won the scholarship. At this point I did not know what to do with my life. The British government imposed a colour bar in its colonies, so young blacks went in only for law or medicine where they could make a living without government support. I did not want to be a lawyer or a doctor. I wanted to be an engineer, but this seemed pointless since neither the government nor the white firms would employ a black engineer. Eventually I decided to study business administration, planning to return to St. Lucia for a job in the municipal service or in private trade. I would simultaneously study law to fall back on if nothing administrative turned up. So I went to the London School of Economics to do the Bachelor of Commerce degree which offered accounting, business management, commercial law and a little economics and statistics. This training has been very helpful in the various administrative jobs I have had to do, its weakness from the standpoint of my subsequent career (which was then inconceivable) was that it lacked mathematics.

I had no idea in 1933 what economics was, but I did well in the subject from the start, and when I graduated in 1937 with first class honours, LSE gave me a scholarship to do a Ph.D. in Industrial Economics.

In 1938, I was given a one-year teaching appointment which was sensational for British universities. This was converted into the usual four-year contract for an Assistant Lecturer in 1939. My foot was now on the ladder, and the rest was up to me. My luck held, and I rose rapidly. In 1948, at 33, I was made a full professor at the University of Manchester.

Until I went to Manchester, my field of study was industrial economics, and I published a series of articles on the subject culminating in a book in 1949. The leading practitioner of this art at LSE was Professor Sir Arnold Plant, and though he was a *laissez-faire* liberal and I a social democrat, I am indebted to him both for his incisive no-nonsense criticism and also for supporting me at crucial moments in the Appointments Committee.

My research work has been in three areas: in industrial economics, which I dropped after 1948; in the history of the world economy since 1870,

which I started in 1944 and still pursue; and in development economics, which I did not begin systematically until about 1950.

I got into the history of the world economy because Frederick Hayek, then Acting Chairman of the LSE Department of Economics suggested that I teach a course on “what happened between the wars” to give concreteness to the massive doses of trade cycle theory which then dominated the curriculum. I replied to Hayek that I did not know what happened between the wars; to which he replied that the best way of learning a subject was to teach it.

So I lectured on this subject for some years, and published a book on it in 1949. Among the questions that the book did not answer was whether the great depression of 1929 was *sui generis*, or one of a cycle stretching back into the nineteenth century. This I was determined to find out. However, data for the years before 1914 were sparse and unreliable, and I could not proceed faster than additions to the data and revisions would permit. I spent a lot of time with the data, and, between 1952 and 1957, published a stream of articles on world production, prices and trade from 1870 to 1914. However, I could never get the book done. In 1957, just as I was ready to start, I went off into administration for six years, never touching the subject. I returned to it in 1963, in my new professorship at Princeton University, to find that the four or five researchers of 1952 had now multiplied into a crowd of writers on this subject. I returned to improvement of the data and was just about ready to write my book when I went off to Barbados for four years setting up the Caribbean Development Bank. Returning to Princeton in 1974, I finally published in 1978 my account of growth and fluctuations in the world economy between 1870 and 1914. My Nobel Lecture derives from this sector of my intellectual interests.

Now for development economics. From the middle of the 1930s, I had spent time in the Colonial Office Library reading reports from the colonial territories on agricultural problems, mining, currency questions and the like, and by comparing different territories, had learnt something about the efficacy of different policies. I did some lecturing on this to colonial students at LSE in the 40s, but it was the throng of Asian and African students at Manchester that set me lecturing systematically on development economics from about 1950, following Hayek’s rule that the way to learn is to teach.

Half my interest was in policy questions, and here, my knowledge broadened in the 50s and 60s as a result of numerous visits to, and work

stints in, African and Asian countries. This half led to my book on development planning published in 1966.

The other half of my interest was in the fundamental forces determining the rate of economic growth. This was the subject of my so-called classic book of 1955, and also the origin of the model to which the Nobel citation refers.

From my undergraduate days, I had sought a solution to the question of what determines the relative prices of steel and coffee. The approach through marginal utility made no sense to me. And the Heckscher-Ohlin framework could not be used, since that assumes that trading partners have the same production functions, whereas coffee cannot be grown in most of the steel producing countries.

Another problem that troubled me was historical. Apparently, during the first fifty years of the industrial revolution, real wages in Britain remained more or less constant while profits and savings soared. This could not be squared with the neoclassical framework, in which a rise in investment should raise wages and depress the rate of return on capital.

One day in August, 1952, walking down the road in Bangkok, it came to me suddenly that both problems have the same solution. Throw away the neoclassical assumption that the quantity of labour is fixed. An “unlimited supply of labour” will keep wages down, producing cheap coffee in the first case and high profits in the second case. The result is a dual (national or world) economy, where one part is a reservoir of cheap labour for the other. The unlimited supply of labour derives ultimately from population pressure, so it is a phase in the demographic cycle.

The publication of my article on this subject in 1954 was greeted equally with applause and with cries of outrage. In the succeeding 25 years, other scholars have written five books and numerous articles arguing the merits of the thesis, assessing contradictory data, or applying it to solving other problems. The debate continues.

Since 1957, I have spent nearly as many years in administration as in academic scholarship. First, a group of six years, 1957-1963, in which I was in turn UN Economic Adviser to the Prime Minister of Ghana, Deputy Managing Director of the UN Special Fund, and Vice-Chancellor (= President) of the University of the West Indies. Then, from 1970 to 1974, I set up the Caribbean Development Bank. These experiences broadened my understanding of development problems, without doing much to deepen it in the scholarly sense.

My wife Gladys was born in Grenada. Her father, who was an Antiguan, and my parents had known each other all their lives. She went to England in 1937 and trained as a teacher. We married in 1947 and have two daughters, Elizabeth and Barbara. My travels have meant much separation, but mutual love has supported the family in all its endeavours.

From *Nobel Lectures, Economics 1969-1980*, Editor Assar Lindbeck, World Scientific Publishing Co., Singapore, 1992. This autobiography/biography was written at the time of the award and first published in the book series *Les Prix Nobel*. It was later edited and republished in *Nobel Lectures*. To cite this document, always state the source as shown above.

*Sir Arthur Lewis died on June 15, 1991.*

Copyright © The Nobel Foundation 1979